This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

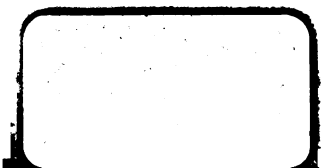
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08242802 4

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MODERN WORLD

BNF
H56

Digitized by Google

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

I.

BENGAL:

AN ACCOUNT OF THE COUNTRY FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES.

Crown 8vo, 5s.

II.

THE ANCIENT WORLD.

Crown 8vo, 6s.

For Critical Notices see the end of this Volume.

Digitized by Google

Modern History

THE MODERN WORLD

BY

J. A. G. BARTON, Upsund. of C
AUTHOR OF Basi Lehandra Dutt
'BENGAL,' 'THE ANCIENT WORLD,' ETC.

ASTOR LIBRARY

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS
EDINBURGH AND LONDON
MDCCCLXXVI

S.

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAP.		PAGE
I.	INTRODUCTORY REMARKS,	1
II.	GREAT BRITAIN,	12
III.	THE DEPENDENCIES OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE,	52
IV.	THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,	85
V.	FRANCE; OR, THE *GRANDE NATION*,	114
VI.	GERMANY,	154
VII.	RUSSIA,	191
VIII.	THE OTHER STATES OF EUROPE,	236
IX.	THE INDEPENDENT STATES OF ASIA, AFRICA, AND AMERICA,	271
X.	RÉSUMÉ,	294

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MODERN WORLD.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

THE best study of man is the future of mankind, and to qualify for that study it is necessary to know the history of the past. We have already spoken of the Ancient World;* it is our purpose now to speak of the Modern World, so remarkable for its political changes and intellectual revolutions. To read it aright we must read the history of its growth; but that does not necessarily imply that we must burden ourselves with a multitude of facts, names, and dates, a dry collection of which will never be palatable to the general reader. The facts in detail are fully set forth in special histories, which are always accessible for reference. The aim we have in view is to present to the reader such a selection of items from them as will give a telescopic view of the world as we find it, explaining the phases it has passed through. In such an attempt it will be

* See Barton's *Ancient World.*

Digitized by Google

necessary, of course, to allude to the salient or turning points of general history, and to the memorable events of all times and places which have contributed to the development of the nations that exist; but it will be necessary, at the same time, to shorten the pictures by abridgment, and to omit not only events and deeds of secondary importance, but also all the unnecessary appendages appertaining to deeds of primary magnitude. The multitude of facts to pick from is immense; but we must not get entangled among them. We want those particulars only that elucidate the dependence of the different countries on each other, and account for their present relative positions. The history of England is, or ought to be, familiar to all our readers, and no regular narration of events appertaining to it will therefore be attempted. But some cursory allusion to the principal events of other countries must be made, since the English reader generally is not very conversant with them.

The main points of our inquiry, it will be understood, are the progress of liberty and the diffusion of civilisation, which virtually comprise the history of modern times. Absolute freedom nowhere exists; it is an indefinite term that does not admit of complete realisation. But every nation carries with it the principle or capacity of development, and the results compassed by such development are freedom, civilisation, and happiness, in greater or less degree. In the ancient world civilisation was well attained, but not freedom, till we come to the times of Greece and Rome. In the modern world, both civilisation and freedom have been better attained in all places, even where much of political liberty has not yet been acquired. The civilisation of the modern

Digitized by Google

world is also of a higher standard than that which was attained in the past, the latter having been founded on universal abasement, while the former is established on universal advancement; but genius, talent, and virtue were found in as much abundance in the old world as they have yet been in the new. The knowledge of the modern world differs from that of the ancient world mainly in this, that it is more extensively diffused; the earth having become man's more fully now than it ever was before. He has bridged over its seas and scaled its mountains; traversed its wildest and most arid plains; explored its remotest inlets and islands, even unto the poles. The knowledge of the ancients permeated only through the countries which were known to them—namely, the southern portions of Asia, the south-eastern countries of Europe, and the north-eastern corner of Africa. But now geography has mastered all the secrets of *terra incognita*, and the pushing civilisation of the age has made every part of the globe accessible by railways, bridges, and canals. The Suez Canal, the Thames Tunnel, the bridges over the Menai Straits and the St Lawrence, are stupendous works which have been multiplied in minor dimensions in every direction. The lightning-post has traversed every part of Europe and the United States, and is rapidly crossing Australasia, India, and the antipodes generally, all of which have been connected with Europe. The network of railways has received almost equal expansion; and the result of these advances is, that the standard of humanity has been raised everywhere by the acceleration of intercourse between the different races inhabiting the earth, and by the relief of material want by the utilisation of the surplusage of

Digitized by Google

one place for the benefit of another. It is a common saying, that all in Europe are now in the presence of each other; nor are America, India, and Australasia more distant on account of the seas that intervene between them. Within an interval of twenty-two days the latest new novel published in London or Edinburgh finds its way out into the hands of the Hindu reader on the banks of the Brahmapootra; and day by day the electric wire doles out the most important items of intelligence from all the great centres of civilisation to the outermost confines of the globe.

Taking the two divisions of the world, the old and the new, together, the course of progress is seen to have travelled from east to west—from Asia to Europe, and thence across the Atlantic to America. It has since diverged towards the south and south-east—to Africa, Australasia, and the islands in the Indian Ocean; while the West, originally a borrower, is repaying to the East her deep debt of gratitude by communicating to her all her recent discoveries and refinements. The footsteps of this advancement it will not be an unpleasant or unremunerative task to trace. The point to start from is the line of demarcation between the histories of the old world and the new, which is broadly defined by the migration of nations from Asia to Europe, by which the Roman world was upset, and of which the cause has not yet been correctly understood, though it is generally assumed to have arisen from the necessities of a growing population. The races in Europe previous to this era were the Celts, the Goths, and the Slavonians; the first of which inhabited Britain, France, a part of Spain, a part of Italy, and the Alps; the second, Germany and

Digitized by Google

Scandinavia; the third, all the countries to the East. It is believed that the Goths migrated from Europe to Asia, but were brought back by the rushing hordes which a short time afterwards precipitated themselves westwards, and compelled all before them to reoccupy their own original quarters to escape being ridden over. The effects of this general hurricane were anarchy and confusion, followed by an intermixture of nations and the establishment of new kingdoms, the first kingdom established being that of the Suevi and the Vandals in Spain, which was overturned by the Visigoths; the second, the kingdom of the Franks in Gaul; the third, the kingdom of the Ostrogoths in Italy, which was subverted by the Lombards; the fourth, the kingdom of the Burgundians, which lay between France and Germany; and the fifth, the kingdom established by the Anglo-Saxons in Britain. Germany became the seat of the residuum of the barbarians, including the Goths; while the Scandinavians, a section of the latter race originally established on the shores of the Baltic, spread themselves out, first, as Normans, into France and Britain, and generally all over Europe; and next, as Varangians, into Russia, where they founded the Russian empire on the Slavonian stem. The immediate results of these changes were the dark and the middle ages; but their ulterior effects have made Europe to flourish anew, called forth the energies of new nations and countries, led to the discovery of new lands, and in the place of one Persia, one Greece, and one Rome, developed several nations, at one and the same time, almost to an equality of civilisation, power, and greatness. They have done even more than this, for they have destroyed the isolation of nations. All over the

Digitized by Google

world, Englishmen, Germans, and Americans are now domiciled almost in every place; and in Europe the different nationalities are constantly intermingling and verging to a fusion of blood and interests. At the same time, the products of the different countries are being freely interchanged, wildernesses are being converted into blooming gardens, mountains clothed with vegetation, climates and temperatures improved, and civilisation transferred from one extremity of the earth to another. The changes effected have been already so considerable, that, while the greatest difficulty was experienced in the past by the boldest men of one country in visiting another without a strong retinue, European females now make the circuit of the globe by themselves, without needing any special protection. The Hindu, who could not cross the Indus or venture on the ocean before without loss of caste, is now constantly passing backwards and forwards from India to Great Britain; and English sportsmen conduct their hunting expeditions in the wilds of Africa and South America, or ramble for pleasure across the steppes of Central Asia.

This is one side of the picture—namely, the favourable side; but it is not the only phase we have to consider. If an extraordinary degree of similarity and contiguity have been arrived at, absolute sameness, or anything near to it, has not been attained. Liberty has grown largely everywhere; but yet are not all countries equally free. The increased intercourse and connection of races have civilised them all round to a great extent; but still are not all races equally civilised. The civilisation of the American and the Russian is not quite on a par with the civilisation of the Englishman

Digitized by Google

and the Frenchman; and the civilisation of the Magyar and the Turk is yet lower in degree. The diversities that yet exist are, in fact, as astounding as the resemblancēs which have been attained. Each country has still a marked speciality to distinguish it from others, and this is observable even in those that are nearly akin. England and America, which ought to resemble most, are sundered alike by the Atlantic and the strong peculiarities and prejudices which distinguish them from each other. France and England are next-door neighbours, approaching nearest in civilisation and refinement, but disunited more by their respective notions of liberty and their historic associations, than by the small channel that runs between them. Germany, Austria, and Russia are all despotic governments, but totally differing from each other in their despotism: the autocrats of Germany and Austria, for instance, can both, like the Czar, set large armies in motion by their orders; but they cannot, as he can, set their peoples also in motion. Whence do these diversities in the midst of so much resemblance arise? Civil and political liberty have been best attained in England and America, yet are not their governments similarly constituted. In a lower degree they have also been attained in Holland, Belgium, Switzerland, and Italy; but France, which has struggled for them most frantically, has not yet been able to secure them. In Germany the struggle for them has yet to come, and threatens more commotions in the future than any that has yet convulsed her. Russia will probably have to wait a hundred years more before she gets them. Turkey will have ceased to exist before the possibility of her securing them can arise. Why is this so?

Digitized by Google

Why in the midst of so much outward resemblance are some nations free and prosperous, while others, their nearest neighbours, are unprosperous and in bonds?

This invites particular attention to the fact that even now nothing is more diverse than the genius of the different nations, notwithstanding their near resemblance in outward civilisation. We have said already that much progress has been made of late on all sides towards the attainment of liberty and refinement; but very different are the ways in which the same ends have been sought for, very different the appliances used in attaining them. Of course every nation has a time, and if it is of the right sort, not one time only, to develop itself fully; but, as liberty and greatness grow, and are not acquired, it depends mainly on the character of the people how their growth is directed, and whether that growth shall be stunted or luxuriant. In general acceptance the republican form of government is regarded as the most free; and so it has been found in the United States, in Holland, and in Switzerland. But it does not equally suit the character of all nations; and in several places the monarchical form has been preferred, as being in all respects more convenient without being less free. England, the freest country in the world, is monarchical; while Spain, the country of brigands and ruffians, was, recently at least, a republic. All America, with the exception of Canada and Brazil, is republican; but, barring the United States, the republics everywhere are based entirely on military force, and are necessarily subject to constant revolutions, and not in any sense free. No two constitutions anywhere are precisely alike; nor do the teachings of

Digitized by Google

the past inculcate that they should be so. The actions of men proceed from their need; that need varies according to time and place, and still more according to the views entertained of it in different places: the actions necessarily are different, and the results dissimilar. The need, moreover, is often, very often, misinterpreted and misdirected by passions and private aims, to which the greatness of nations, the wisdom of states, and the wellbeing of administrations are often unscrupulously sacrificed. Few, very few, are the states in which passions and private aims cannot be gratified at the expense of the general weal. Such being the diversities that influence mankind, it is not strange that the results are so dissimilar.

Nor does the contest for greatness and liberty suit all states, at least at all times; and it is certain that nations are not necessarily wretched because they happen to be less great or less free. As in individual, so in national life, a limited sphere of action seems often to afford a greater degree of wellbeing, if not of happiness, than the most unbounded freedom. A shepherd or a peasant is not less happy than a prime minister or a prince; and intrinsically the Swedes and the Danes are not less well off than the English or the French. It is the necessary fate of Asiatic nations to be subject to the domination of Europeans; and India is held by the English, and all Siberia by the Russians. Their dependence doubtless is to them a political misfortune; but they are really happier in it than they ever were in their freedom. If they could be both happy and free, which would be the case if they were also powerful, that would doubtless be the best state for them. But under existing circumstances

Digitized by Google

they are not unhappy; and, in the case of Egypt, it is doubtful if she is not happier than the sovereign state. The development of nations requires a perpetual change of position; but for states in the condition of Siberia and India, a course of dependence, when it secures rest and peace, is apparently better suited. Even progress itself marks its onward course most frequently by convulsions; but, for progress to be so attained, all countries are not equally qualified. That qualification must be acquired; and it can only be acquired by a preparative course of rest, which is therefore not dear even when it is purchased by subjection.

States of the above description, however, will require little attention in our present inquiry, which will mainly embrace the states of Europe, which are all more or less free. America in such a review stands only as an offshoot of Europe, and will be noticed as such. The old races in it, treated with violence, have nearly died out, except in South America, where the Spaniards and the Portuguese intermixed with them and raised up a spurious race. This distinction deserves to be remembered. The whole of North America, with the exception of Mexico and the states to the south of it, has been colonised by emigrants from Europe, and the native Americans extirpated; the whole of South America, and Mexico in North America, were conquered, and the native races — though treated with unusual atrocity—were not exterminated. Regarding Africa there is little to mention, as that continent scarcely forms a historical part of the world yet, having no movement or development to exhibit, except in the coast land on the north, the history of which belongs to the histories of Europe and Asia. Of Asia,

Digitized by Google

also, the account to be given must necessarily be slender, as her destiny in the modern world is generally that of subjection to European authority, which Russia, at least, is working out with persistent pertinacity. The independent states in Asia are the effete ones of the ancient world, to which a very cursory allusion only need be made. Of all countries the general spirit and political formation only will be noticed, and those events which have created an epoch or changed the aspect and aspirations of the people.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

GREAT BRITAIN.

GREAT BRITAIN occupies a very insignificant position in the map of the world, but there is no part of that map to which her dominion does not extend. Let the reader spread out before him the chart of the two hemispheres and run his eye over all the strategical points therein, and he will find that almost all of them are held by the Mistress of the Seas. They have been won for her by her soldiers and sailors in the quietest manner possible — a manner peculiar to her children; and they virtually secure to her an almost universal dominion, which places her foremost in the scale of empires. With this material superiority she has also secured a moral pre-eminence of a yet higher character. Her institutions are at this moment absolutely the best in the world, her government the least faulty; and thus well balanced at home and abroad, she retains a steadfast position, unaffected by political storms either from without or within. True liberty, which is bragged of everywhere, is really domiciled only within the seas which gird the British Isles. Dethroned princes, runaway potentates, persecuted ministers and patriots, exiles of every description,

Digitized by Google

flock to them from all parts of the world, for that security and peace which other countries boast of but are unable to afford.

The history of such a country could not but be instructive, and perhaps the history of no other country has been better read. One great truth established by it is, that the growth of excellence is slow—very slow—and systematical even from the outset. Those who choose to do so, may also trace in it the hand of Providence regulating the growth at every stage. If the Jews in ancient times were a peculiarly favoured people, so in modern times have been the English; though that favour has been manifested, as is usual with the dispensations of Providence, in the midst of storms and convulsions, which purified the atmosphere of their island home. We cannot stop to notice the history of this progress step by step as it was developed; it will be enough for our purpose to indicate the more important landmarks by which it is to be traced.

The fabulous history of Britain begins with the colonisation of the island by Bruto or Brute, the grandson of Æneas, who is said to have been succeeded by a long line of descendants. Of these, however, we have no historic knowledge. The first known inhabitants of the island were the Celts, who were seen in it by the Phœnicians when they came to it for tin. These aborigines are generally set down as having been very barbarous, but erroneously so, since we find that they were collected in political communities under the government of a king, had a national religion, and were possessed of some knowledge of philosophy, astronomy, and medicine. They are represented on all hands as having been very brave, and as having given the

Digitized by Google

Romans a warm reception on their first invasion of Britain, which so astonished the legions of Cæsar, that, contrary to their usual behaviour, they betrayed a dislike to continue the fight. It was only when subsequently Mandubratius, a traitor, fled over to Gaul, and thereby created a division among the Britons, that the arts, not valour, of Cæsar, prevailed; but there is no doubt that at the outset Cæsar was fairly beaten, since Suetonius, himself a Roman general, admits that it was so. Nor were the Celts of England finally conquered till one hundred and forty years after, by Agricola, in the reign of Domitian; while the Celts of Scotland, the Picts and Scots, were never subdued.

The history of this period, however, is not the history of the English people, who were of later growth. The decline of the Roman empire compelled the Romans to abandon Britain after a sway of about four hundred and seventy years. The Picts and Scots, who had always been troublesome to their southern neighbours, now became much more so, which led to Vortigern's application to the Saxons for aid. The assistance asked for was given; the Picts and Scots were defeated; but the Saxons throve so well in the land they had come to, that, far from retiring from it themselves, they began to invite over fresh hordes from the forests of Germany, which finally enabled them to establish their dominion from the Thames to the Tamar, and compelled the Britons to retire into Wales.

England derives her name from Anglen, a district of Holstein, the home of the Angles, a fierce people, the traces of whose character may yet be observed in that of the English of the present day. There were three German tribes that came over to the

Digitized by Google

island almost simultaneously—namely, the Angles and Jutes from the south of Denmark, and the Saxons from the north of Germany. All these were afterwards classified under the general name of Anglo-Saxons. They were all brave and hardy, and had been noted from the earliest times for their piracies at sea, and for the havoc they made every now and then on the coasts of Britain and France; but it nevertheless took them one hundred and fifty years to establish their authority completely in Britain, during the whole of which period they were obliged to keep up a perpetual warfare with the Celts. It is in connection with these disturbances that the fables regarding Arthur and his knights are told.

After the conquest of the country, the different Saxon hordes divided it into seven distinct principalities, each setting up a ruler of its own; and this division was called the Heptarchy, the kings of which only nominally acknowledged one of their number as their Brœtwalda, or chief. This arrangement remained in force for upwards of two hundred years, after which Egbert, king of Wessex, united the different states into one monarchy. The other great sovereigns of the race were Alfred, Athelstane, Edgar, and Harold. The whole of the Saxon era was one of great unrest. In the reign of Egbert began the invasions of the Danes, a nation of pirates, who committed dreadful ravages on the coast of Britain; and at about the same time the Northmen or Normans, another horde from the same hive, infested the north-west coast of France, where they eventually settled. The Danes received a temporary check from the tact and vigour of Alfred, who obliged them to leave the country or to acknow-

Digitized by Google

ledge his supremacy, which led to their settlement in Mercia and East Anglia. Their insolence culminated in the invasion of England by Sweyn in 1013, and the succession of his son Canute to the throne. Canute was succeeded by two other Danish princes, after whom the Saxon line was restored in 1041, by the succession of Edward the Confessor. Harold succeeded Edward, but with no valid title to the crown, which was, within a very short time, wrenched from him by William of Normandy.

The Normans wrested the possession of the country from the Saxons; but the Normans were not Franks, nor the Saxons or Anglo-Saxons identical with the English nation as it was afterwards developed. Hume says that, by the time of William, the Normans had thoroughly mingled with the Franks. This they had doubtless done, as well by intermarriage as by the adoption of the language, religion, and usages of the Franks; but, nevertheless, the invaders of England were not French or even of mixed descent. Macaulay, in his usual dogmatical manner, speaks of the French kings of England; but they were no more French than Huns—they were Scandinavians born on French soil. The remarks of Schlegel on the point are very pertinent. He correctly observes that, though the Normans adopted the French language, "in mind and manners they retained their individuality throughout the whole of the middle ages; so that at that time the Normans and the French, even when speaking the same language, must by no means be regarded as one, but as two very distinct nations." The English, again, are a mixed race, derived from the fusion of the Celts, Anglo-Saxons, Danes, *and Normans*. The *bonâ fide* English nation was therefore not in

Digitized by Google

existence when the battle of Hastings was fought. All that can be conceded to without demur comes therefore to this, that the people who inhabited the north-west coast of France defeated the people that inhabited England in 1066; but whether that implies the glorification of the French nation at the expense of the English is a very different question.

The conquest made by the Normans was not an easy one, and but for adventitious circumstances would perhaps never have been achieved. The invaders crossed an undefended sea, to land on an undefended shore, Harold having been obliged to withdraw both his army and his navy from the southern coast to repel an invasion in the north made by Hadrada, king of Norway. When, after having defeated one enemy, he came back to repel the other, his army was numerically so inferior to that of the invaders, that his best captains advised him to fall back upon London, and, by laying waste the country about it, starve the Normans, also giving time thereby to the Saxon fleet to reassemble and intercept communication with Normandy. But Harold's blood was up, and his kindly heart rejected the idea of laying any part of the country waste: and it was for these reasons that the battle of Hastings was lost.

Conquest to a brave people is a bitter draught. The sense of foreign domination weighed heavily on the Saxons, and the violence of the Normans made matters worse. The consequence was that fierce local risings were constant, and were followed by revengeful cruelties on the part of the conquerors. William himself followed a remorseless policy, the object held in view by him being the annihilation of the Saxons as a distinct race. His efforts to crush them out

Digitized by Google

were, however, unsuccessful; they only kept up bitter feuds and jealousies between the two parties in the state.

Notwithstanding all this, however, the Norman Conquest was not without its advantages. Previous to it England had no recognised position in Europe. The Romans had ruled as conquerors, keeping themselves distinct from the people they conquered, whom they compensated by protection and by instruction in their laws and institutions,—somewhat in the way in which the English are now civilising their subject races in India. The Saxons, who came after them, mixed with the Celts freely, but were at best half savages themselves; and almost throughout the whole period of their ascendancy there was nothing but strife, waste, and turbulence. Compared with those periods the era of the Normans does not suffer. In it the conquerors ruled indeed with a rod of iron, trampled rough-shod over the feelings of the races they had conquered, and tried by every means in their power to root them out at least from a political existence. But they brought with them a civilisation superior to that of the Saxons; they had derived from the Franks a better cultivated language; and they had also acquired from that nation a knowledge of useful and tasteful arts. They were not particularly anxious, it is true, to advance the condition of the people they had conquered; but having assumed the sovereignty of the country for good, they, for their own advantage, began to improve and beautify it, by better cultivation, and by the erection of permanent works of usefulness and embellishment; while, for securing a better hold on the land, they introduced their own language, or rather Norman-French, as the language of government, of the law

Digitized by Google

courts, and of the upper classes generally, which, if it caused a confusion of languages at first, was beneficial in the end, in this way, that it made the refinements of the Franks accessible at least to people of the higher classes in Britain.

The Saxons were a barbarous people, in some respects even more barbarous than the Celts they had conquered. But they introduced popular institutions, and brought with them those notions of equal rights which they held in common with all the German nations. This was the indelible mark they left on the land. The constitution of the Wittenagemot is not exactly known. It may be admitted that it was not a representative body; but it was assuredly the nearest approach to representation that could have been expected in that age. It was an assembly of thanes who held lands immediately of the Crown, and who could command the services of their military vassals. These thanes elected the king, and their assent was also necessary to give effect to all legislative enactments, since, except with their acquiescence and support, the kings had no hold whatever on the people. It is said that similar assemblies existed even among the Britons, which were called *Fahring brat* or *Combdach*. But the Saxon Wittenagemot was at least a better recognised institution, with greater powers. Under the Normans the form was continued, the assemblies assuming the Latin titles of *concilium* or *curia;* but their powers were very much curtailed. It will thus be seen that the parliamentary form of government in England was coeval with political government, though, of course, the institution was not at all times equally free. Under the Saxons the thanes often exercised immeasurable power,—as was the case with Godwin,

Digitized by Google

Harold, and Siward; but the commons were not ignored. The rule of the Normans was more despotic; the commons were nowhere, and even the barons exercised such power only as they were able to usurp.

At the close of the first five hundred years of her existence the progress of England was confined to the impressions left on her by her Roman masters; in the next five hundred years were engrafted on them the free institutions of the Anglo-Saxons. In the succeeding five hundred years she passed through the semi-barbarism of Norman domination, at the end of which she reached the confines of civilisation. But the impress of the Normans was not the less necessary to form the national character. The feudal system in its matured state was introduced by the Normans. By it the lands were partly retained by the Crown, and partly divided among the great military leaders, on the condition of their attending on the king in his wars. This change was apparently a retrograde one; it introduced a new race of paramount landlords by dispossessing the former owners of the soil; the possessions of an entire community were sequestered, and the peasantry disposed of as villeins and serfs, going with the estate on which they were settled; a large number of petty tyrants were formally established, who virtually exercised sovereign power within their estates under the general control of the king. But, on the other hand, it also inaugurated order, property, and civil subordination; and consolidated a number of petty, antagonistic states into one powerful kingdom, having one recognised head, one law, one language, and one supreme legislature. The spirit of popular liberty had been previously derived from the Saxons;

Digitized by Google

the framework of polity had been borrowed from the Romans; it was left to the Normans to convert a federal community into an integral kingdom, and to consolidate it by securing social subordination and proprietary security; both which advantages were by the feudal system fully secured.

The Norman reign lasted for four hundred and twenty years. At the outset the monarchs were absolute, having nothing to fear except the greatness of their own vassals, the iron barons they had called forth, who met in council when summoned by the king to give their advice and consent on matters which were laid before them, but who did not at this stage exercise any direct control over him. The weakness and tyranny of one of the sovereigns—John—changed this state of things. The barons, driven to rebellion, extorted from him great concessions, which were embodied in what was called the *Magna Charta*, as distinguished from other minor charters previously granted by his predecessors, which conceded particular privileges to some of the greater vassals and churchmen of the State. The charter now obtained secured for the first time all orders of the people in their rights and privileges; the monarchy of the country was declared by it to be limited; and it was expressly provided that no taxes were to be levied from the people, except in a few special cases, without the consent of the general council of the barons and the clergy—that all cities and boroughs were to be allowed to preserve their ancient liberties—that no person was to be tried on suspicion alone—and that no person was to be tried or punished except by the legal judgment of his peers, or by the laws of the land. This, which was regarded at the time as a shameful violation of the royal prero-

Digitized by Google

gative, and which drew down upon it the thunders of the Vatican, has been since justly considered as the first chapter of the English constitution and the palladium of English liberty; nay, as the first broken rivet of human emancipation. The rate of progress in Britain was greatly accelerated by it. A considerable interval elapsed before the rights it conceded were fully established; but they were all established in due course. In the reign that immediately followed, the barons rose up again, and undertaking the task of reforming the constitution thoroughly, subverted the exclusive domination of the Crown and the chief nobles by introducing the principle of popular representation, which was practically exemplified by calling together the first Parliament, in which each city and borough was represented.

The Norman chiefs who obtained possession of England by conquest, also held territories in France under the vassalage of the French crown, the regal possession of Normandy having been surrendered in the reign of John, excepting that of the Norman isles—Jersey, Guernsey, and Alderney—which is held by England to this day. This gave poignancy to the fierce and protracted struggle for the phantom crown of France, which was commenced by Edward III., who based his claim in right of his mother, a princess of France. The contest was diversified by the splendid victories gained by the English at Cressy, Poitiers, Verneuil, and Agincourt; but it eventually ended in their entire expulsion from France, which was regarded by both the contending parties as an ignominious reverse for England, though it proved really to be a great gain to her by thenceforth concentrating all her energies to the

Digitized by Google

development of her greatness, while, had the two crowns been united, England would probably never have had an independent existence. The fruits of the reverse were, however, not immediately reaped. Without any external enemy to fight with, the English barons began to quarrel among themselves; and Edward III., having left several sons, a contest for the sovereign power between two of the royal branches divided the nobility and the people into two distinct parties, which carried on a sanguinary strife for upwards of thirty years, that was only terminated by the accession of Henry VII. to the throne. The effects of these struggles were the almost entire annihilation of the power of the barons, and the extinction of villeinage, which liberated the aspirations of the people, and enabled them to move forward and assume their proper place in the commonwealth.

The pacific era of the Tudors was very favourable to the growth of public prosperity. The elevation of the commons, and the increase of authority of the king, were both the result of the decline of the feudal and ecclesiastical orders—the latter of which was exhausted by its arrogance, at the same time that the former was annihilated by self-destructive feuds. The Tudor age is generally regarded as a very despotic one, and doubtless was so; but that despotism was prejudicial only to the interests of the upper classes, not to those of the people. The reign of Henry VII. terminated the period called the "Middle Ages," and ushered the world at large to greater light and freedom. In England, the reign of Elizabeth was particularly distinguished. In the Plantagenet period, it was the sword that had arbitrated on all doubtful occasions between the upper and the productive classes; at the commencement of

Digitized by Google

the Protestant Reformation, persecution and the fagot assumed the place of arms; but a better era was inaugurated by the Reformation after it was accomplished, as it smoothed the way for other reforms by affording greater freedom to thought and discussion, and called forth the middle and productive classes into prominence. The wise and vigorous administration of Elizabeth gave scope and impulse to these movements by opening out new careers and new fields of enterprise to her subjects. A great impulse was given to mercantile adventures by the extraordinary geographical discoveries of the age. The exploits of Drake, Cavendish, Raleigh, Frobisher, and others, led to the establishment of colonies and factories, and the opening out of new branches of commerce in distant and hitherto unknown lands. Commerce, which had till now been regarded with disdain by the generality of country gentlemen, and even by younger sons, who preferred to it a life of penury and dependence, became henceforth the rage, and was pursued by almost all classes with equal alacrity. This broke up the immense fortunes of the upper classes, which had, in previous eras, rendered them formidable alike to the king and the people; it also made the people richer, and necessarily more ambitious. The arms of the queen were, at the same time, victorious in distant lands—and Providence having destroyed the Spanish Armada on the English coast, the prestige of the English nation was thoroughly established; and, from a second-rate position, England assumed from this time the rank and status of a first-rate power. The era was also pre-eminently marked by the emancipation of letters. The touch of Prospero's wand England received from Shakespeare and Spenser;

Digitized by Google

Raleigh was her first historian; and, in the following reign, Bacon emancipated philosophy from the fetters which encumbered her.

The Stuart era that followed was not half so vigorous; and if it was characterised by the absence of external disturbances, that was mainly owing to the incidental advantage gained by the accession of James I., which not only settled the right of succession, but united together two distinct countries, which had been perpetually fighting with each other from the earliest dawn of their existence. The popular spirit, however, which had been gaining force during the Tudor period, now began to develop itself—inconveniently for the theory of the divine right of kings; and, in the reign of Charles I., the Crown and the Commons found themselves in direct opposition to each other, and battled for their rights—those of the latter being vindicated by the success of the "Great Rebellion," and finally guaranteed and made living by the Revolution of 1688. The results of the civil war were not at once very decisive. The reign of Charles was overthrown, and the king beheaded; but the supremacy of the Commons was not abiding: and the military despotism of Cromwell being soon found to be more intolerable than the misrule of kings, royalty, in the person of Charles II., was replaced on the throne. But the disturbances were so far salutary in their effects that they laid the foundations of England's power, infused energy and enterprise through every class of her population, promoted inquiry, and led, in the next generation, to the royal authority being curtailed for good, and defined. In the reign of Charles II., the Habeas Corpus Act, which protects the subject from illegal imprisonment, was passed; and the reign of James

Digitized by Google

II. closed with the Bill of Rights, which enumerated the various laws by which the royal prerogative and popular liberties were defined and settled, the same being ratified by William and Mary on their being raised to the throne.

The corruptions of the Stuart period were atrocious; and manners were then more openly licentious and depraved than they had ever been, even during the middle ages. The vice of concubinage was common; and a mistress made part of the settled paraphernalia of every great family—the principal cause of which was the low moral and intellectual standard of the age. In mathematics, physical science, and metaphysics, considerable advances had been made—Locke, Newton, and Boyle having cleared the way; but the more accessible literature of common life—that which purifies the heart and elevates manners—had barely commenced to revive. Milton, the second great poet of Britain, shed lustre over the era of the Commonwealth; but his was an isolated star, of pre-eminent purity indeed, but which only lighted the mass of impurity around it, without being able to dissipate its intenseness; nor was the atmosphere thoroughly purged till the reign of Anne—the age of Addison, Bolingbroke, Dryden, and Pope—with which the Stuart period was closed. The reign of Anne was also celebrated for the great military triumphs of Marlborough over the French at Blenheim, Ramillies, and Oudenarde, by which Louis XIV. was humiliated and his power considerably reduced; and for the chivalrous bravery of the Earl of Peterborough in Spain. But what it will be best remembered for is the formal union of England and Scotland, which was then carried out by the abolition of the separate government and separate

Digitized by Google

Parliament of Scotland, and by the adoption of the consolidated title of Great Britain, from 1707.

All the civil, religious, and political institutions of England were completed during the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, which were followed by the rule of the house of Brunswick. Since then, in less than two hundred years, England has attained, with the greatest rapidity, her present high position in the world, and acquired an empire that environs the globe. The commencement of the Hanoverian rule was not particularly distinguished. In morals it was worse even than the worst portion of the Stuart period; and it is recorded of George I. that he brought with him from Germany a whole seraglio of faded mistresses. The peace of the country was also disturbed by the various attempts made to restore the Stuart family to the throne, both by their friends in England and Scotland, and by the sovereigns of France and Spain. No sooner were these attempts put down than the English nation found itself, in the reign of George III., engaged in a protracted war with France—a war that called forth all the energies of Britain, and made her great almost in spite of herself. The national character had taken a long time—no less than seventeen hundred years—to mature; but it had now developed itself fully, and was quite equal to the crisis. The result was a great accession of power and territories both in America and in the East Indies. A temporary reverse followed when, in 1775, the United States of America resisted the claims of the parent country to tax them. These States had been created mainly by the colonisation of English inhabitants. By their first formation the parent country was much relieved, as they served as an outlet for her political and re-

Digitized by Google

ligious discontents, and opened to her enterprising classes a new and boundless field of industry. Their rupture with the mother-country on a later day was the inevitable result of overgrowth. Britain, like mother-states in general, was naturally anxious to preserve her supremacy over them; but the state of pupilage was disowned, and her rule violently overthrown. France and Spain took advantage of England's difficulty to avenge their old defeats, and humiliate the Mistress of the Seas; and, in 1779, their combined fleets, sailing up the Channel, defied England, and threatened Plymouth. All this was repaid with interest on a later day; but England was compelled to acknowledge the independence of the United States in 1783—at which period, besides the nations openly arrayed against her, Russia, Sweden, and Denmark formed themselves into an armed neutrality that was hostile to her.

But those who had expected that the English people would be crippled, as well as humiliated, by their reverses, were disappointed. The prosperous career of England was continued, and many advantages were gained by her during the short respite from wars that followed. From the conclusion of peace with the Americans there was nothing to disturb her until the outbreak of the great war in 1793, when the French, after having deposed and murdered their king, came back to renew their old struggles with her. Hostilities were now continued for several years, and England was for some time in constant dread of French invasions, till Pitt roused the nation from their pusillanimous torpor. Then followed the development of the genius of Howe, Jervis, Collingwood, and Nelson, and the crowning triumph of Trafalgar; then the restoration of peace;

Digitized by Google

and then, again, the resumption of hostilities, till the island hornets were fairly aroused and stung the Frenchmen to madness at Waterloo. The gain to England from these hostilities was great, as all the French possessions in the East and West Indies were now finally taken, which made ample amends for the loss of the United States. Nor would England be a loser if these again were ever lost. Her greatness is in the spirit of the nation, which easily diverts its activity from one sphere of action to another, and repairs loss in one quarter by gain in another.

The difficulties of England have always been Ireland's opportunity, and, during the war with France, a rebellion broke out in that island and raged with great violence. The original conquest of Ireland was accomplished in the reign of Henry II., since which time she has always preserved the character of a surly dog snapping at his master's chain. By the time of the Tudors the best portions of the island had to be reconquered, the conquest being completed towards the end of Elizabeth's reign; so that virtually James I. was the first king who ruled over the united kingdoms of England, Scotland, and Ireland. But at this time Ireland was ruled rather as a dependency, and not like Scotland, on terms of equality; and it was only natural that she should remain unreconciled to her lot. Concessions after concessions were made to her afterwards; but as the Irish were the descendants of the Celts, and by far the greater portion of them Catholics, the advances for fusion made to them by Protestants descended from the Anglo-Saxons and Normans were, for the most part, received with repugnance, and rejected. The rebellion in Ireland was sup-

Digitized by Google

pressed after much bloodshed; and the English being determined to amalgamate her with England, an incorporating union, as with Scotland, was effected from the commencement of 1801. This arrangement was, upon the whole, carried out with great fairness; but it did not allay the discontent of the Irish. A new insurrection broke out in Ireland in 1803; and ever since she has remained as an open sore by the side of Britain, the only source of her weakness in Europe.

The reign of George III. was an illustrious one, but not simply for the triumphs which graced the British arms. All over the country the condition of all classes was ameliorated—their clothing, lodging, furniture, and diet improved. To these succeeded moral improvements, decline of intemperance, cessation of tavern indulgences, disappearance of footpads, &c. It was also the age of humanity, when institutions of charity and benevolence were multiplied, cruel and nefarious punishments abolished, and efforts made to better the state of the poor; and when that crowning act of mercy, the abolition of the slave trade, was carried out.

The victory of Waterloo was succeeded by the longest peace on record; and peace has always proved to be England's greatest ally in securing both material improvement and improvements in mind, freedom, justice, and charity. The reigns of George IV. and William IV. were eminently progressive, the latter being particularly distinguished by the political enfranchisement of the people, and by the removal of obstructive municipal and commercial monopolies. The reign of Victoria has similarly been signalised by expansion in every direction, and by an equalisation of benefits among

Digitized by Google

all classes, and a multiplication of the conveniences and employments of social existence. In literature, the period of the Georges produced the best of British historians—Hume, Gibbon, and Robertson; the intellectual development in other departments being sustained by a brilliant galaxy of other writers, with Johnson at their head, whose era was extended to still later days. Since then the country has become more thoroughly utilitarian even in letters, and the rage for poems and dramas has been dying out. We do not know what would be the fate of a new Hamlet or Othello at this moment; we are certain that a new Paradise Lost would not be endured; and, if Tennyson is tolerated, it is only because he is accepted as the last of a race that will not be perpetuated. Practical writing is now particularly valued; and by the ill-educated classes novels also are much read.

The greatness achieved by England has thus been very slowly and gradually developed. It is the law of nature that all that is valuable and permanent in character should be the result, not of natural aspiration or of accidental success, but of trial and suffering, disappointment and defeat. Her constitution, which is the envy and wonder of all nations, took more than nine hundred years, from the days of the Saxons, to grow. The expulsion of the Stuarts gave it its finishing stroke; and it has ever since consisted of a hereditary monarchy, balanced on the one side by a house of peers, and on the other by a council of the people, all based on a Bill of Rights carefully defining the prerogatives and privileges of the several parties concerned. This combination as it stands could not have been formed except by a process extending over several

Digitized by Google

ages. Other nations in endeavouring to arrive at the same result more quickly, have only engulfed themselves in mischief and anarchy. All Europe has since essayed the parliamentary system in imitation of England; but England alone has escaped both autocracy and anarchy, to one or other of which, if not to both, most of the other nations have fallen victims. In the English constitution no one is all-powerful—not the king, nor the lords, nor the people, nay, not even the law. Oppression when imposed by law or exercised by power has always something to check it, if it be but an unwritten custom, a remembrance, or a prejudice.

The monarchy of England is, for all executive purposes, as powerful as it need be — almost as strong, in fact, as despotism itself; but so limited in other respects that, were it thoroughly understood, it would fully satisfy the passionate ambition of those who seek in government for absolute equality. Under it the people enjoy an unbounded but unabused liberty; while the country is more prosperous than any in the world, without having had to sacrifice any rights or liberties to attain that prosperity. With all its jobberies of election, &c., the Parliament is, what it was intended to be, the great council of a great nation, where every passion and every prejudice is represented, together with the remedial opposition of great manliness, intelligence, and independence. All the real wishes and wants of the country are thus fairly brought together, and at the same time properly preponderated and reconciled. Amidst the most clamorous opposition in Parliament and from the Press, and in the face of mob-meetings, reform petitions, &c., the government works smoothly, backed with all the resources of

Digitized by Google

liberty and liberal institutions. Everything done is done under the fullest expansion of light and noise. Nothing escapes the universal law of publicity—a publicity very different from what is understood to be such in other countries. It is neither imposed, nor guaranteed, nor restrained by law. It emanates from the public spirit of the nation, and is as ample as that public spirit itself. Very often the liberty of the press is abused; but that does no harm. The public reserves to itself the right of deciding in every case, and special pleading on one side or the other is perfectly innocuous. What is England's business is the private business of every man in England, and the hands of the Government are strengthened, not weakened, by discussions whether favourable or otherwise. No amount of criticism, no amount of abuse even, can impair the vigour and determination of a people determined to weigh all the *pros* and *cons* of a question and judge of it for themselves. It is not an ideal grievance or an ideal advantage that thus engrosses attention, but the everyday occurrences of busy life. It has always been so since England has been free; and, if it were not so, the Englishman would pull down his constitution about his own ears. His house, he knows, is not made of glass; and so he is not afraid to pelt stones at it, but rather takes a pleasure in doing so, to assure himself that what he takes so much pride in is really as substantial as he believes it to be.

After the king rank the peers, and this is so in almost all countries. But the peerage in England is a very different institution from what it is in other places. It draws to itself all the great notabilities of the nation—in law, in arms, in diplomacy, in

Digitized by Google

finance—without any regard to their origin, at the same time that it sends back to the mass of the people all its collateral branches, which fall in with the general ranks of society without title or distinction. The law of primogeniture was introduced in the feudal times. It is unjust on principle, and therefore indefensible. But it regulates both the constitution and society of England remarkably well, by throwing over the younger sons of peers into the common herd, with whom they are trained, and with whom they struggle energetically to recover the position from which they were thrust out. In the days of Norman supremacy the upper classes were not so easy of access from below, as the barons did not permit any encroachments on the distinctions which exclusively belonged to them. But the nation has since become thoroughly practical—the spinning-jenny and the steam-engine have brought down the nobility from their high elevation, or rather raised others to an equality, or near to an equality, with them. To every man who possesses talent and energy, whatever his origin, whatever his opinions, access to distinction and power is open; and, a great part of their body being thus drawn from the people, the aristocracy have no interests apart from those of the people, to whom they are faithful and by whom they are prized.

Besides the aristocracy there is a class of country gentlemen who spontaneously and gratuitously perform a great portion of the public duties elsewhere performed by paid officials—acting as sheriffs, justices of the peace, grand jurors, commissioners of roads, &c.—and who exhibit in their position and habits all the example of a real aristocracy; and, as the distinctions between these and the gentry at

Digitized by Google

large are but indefinite, virtually all the classes are linked together and freely mix and commingle. There is no broad line of demarcation even to separate those in power from those who are not in power, as the boundary is being constantly crossed and recrossed. It is said of Napoleon I. that, while ruminating on his own career in St Helena, he exclaimed, "Now we shall see what Wellington will do!" He was quite unable to understand that it was possible for an English gentleman, after having gained such triumph as was obtained at Waterloo, to stop in his onward career and quietly resume his former position in life. It is from the bosom of rural life that in the hour of need all the great men of England are drawn; and when their work is finished they return again to their former place quietly, crowned possibly with honours and preferment—oftener not. The eminent importance of this individual moderation to national aggrandisement was well understood in ancient Greece and Rome, but in the modern world it is understood nowhere except in America and England.

The elevation of the people in England began with her agricultural, industrial, and commercial prosperity. The story of her agricultural development is diversified. The early agriculture of England was rude, till the Romans, who took a delight in the art, improved it. From the Saxons no improvement proceeded; in peaceful arts they were inferior to the Celts they conquered. The Normans understood the subject better, but the domestic feuds of the barons prevented them from doing much, and all that was done during their time was done only by the ecclesiastics, who cultivated their ample domains with great knowledge and skill,

Digitized by Google

improved the breed of cattle, and introduced better drainage wherever it was needed. The neglect of their estates by the lay lords was wicked; the rage for sheep-farming for wool to supply the manufactories of the Low Countries made matters worse; and it was not till those manufactories were ruined by religious persecution that the English farmer returned to the plough with earnestness. The progress of commerce under the Tudors and the Stuarts, and the construction of roads and highways during the same periods, gave agricultural development its greatest impetus; and by the reign of Anne the whole interior of the country was full of farms. At the present moment the total cultivated area in England is set down at about 34,000,000 acres, and the total uncultivated area at about 6,000,000 acres —including the acreage occupied by houses and gardens in towns and villages, by railroads, highways, rivers, and canals. The amount of land remaining to be reclaimed is necessarily very inconsiderable. All efforts of improvements are now, therefore, confined to scientific farming and the investment of capital, which attempt to make the area already under cultivation as productive as practicable. The lot of agricultural labourers in the country is, as everywhere else, the lowest, the work-people of cities and towns being as a rule better off. But this is true only of the class of labourers who have no land of their own to farm. An English farmer, it is well known, is absolutely the most respectable specimen of his class in the world, and is better circumstanced not only than English work-people in general, but even than many people of the higher classes—civil, professional, and mercantile.

Digitized by Google

The development of manufactures in the country has been still more successful. At this moment England furnishes clothing and household conveniences not only to all her own dependencies, but to a very large portion of the world; and yet for a long time almost all foreign countries were superior to her in this respect. So obtuse was the policy of England at the outset that she actually persecuted foreigners who came over to teach her what she did not understand, and it was not till this policy was altered that any improvement was made. The manufacture of wool was the first that was introduced, and dates from the time when the Flemings came over and brought the art with them. The manufacture of silk was introduced by the French in the fourteenth century. Linen came much later on the field, as even up to 1688 the finer descriptions of it were obtained from Germany. But England made up manfully for lost time. Her foreign teachers from being first tyrannised over were afterwards encouraged, sheltered, and imitated; and, by steadily pursuing this policy, she succeeded in time in attaining the foremost place, which she retains. The chief causes of her success were the industry and probity of her children, and, in a lower degree, the invention of improved machinery by them for increasing and cheapening the products of labour. The genius of Watts, Hargreaves, and Arkwright gave an impetus to the native partiality for hard work, and soon enabled their country to outstrip all competition. In all sorts of woollen and cotton manufacture, in leather goods, in hardware manufacture, earthenware, china, and glass, England holds at this moment the first place. The poetry of the subject is also best understood by her. The

Digitized by Google

World's Fair, or Great Exhibition, was an English idea for recording the triumph of industrial enterprises, which has been adopted by all nations since; and no country need be ashamed of following England's lead in this respect at least.

The history of English commerce is a long story to tell, to which we could not do justice in this place. The native riches of England gave her a mercantile character even from the days of the Phœnicians, who traded with her in tin; and to the Normans she was known as an El Dorado abounding in precious articles more than Normandy. But it was not till the time of Elizabeth that any signal development of her peculiar aptitude in traffic took place. The administrators of the Virgin reign, so pre-eminently illustrious in all respects, particularly understood the interests of buyers and sellers, and took the greatest care to disentangle the nation from all commercial treaties and alliances with other nations which were found to be embarrassing, and the relief from which gave the first fair start to their country in the mart of the world. Unfortunately, in that age the monopoly system was the rage in all places, and continued to be so up to the time of the Georges, which accounts for commerce continuing to be tied down, to a considerable extent, to the latter era. The first efforts to liberate her from these shackles also emanated from England, commencing with the repeal of the Navigation laws, by which the carrying trade of the country had been confined to British-built ships owned and navigated by British subjects—an exclusiveness which was of course adopted by other countries, and necessarily put a stop to healthy competition. The next step taken in the same direction was the abolition of all

Digitized by Google

protective duties, which rendered trade free. Both these concessions have since been generally reciprocated; but, had it not been so, the gain from them to England would still have been immense, as the best part of the world's traffic had intermediately passed into British hands. As it is, the actual result is an unprecedented success. In riches England has never been equalled in any age by any country of not larger area and population; while at this moment she is absolutely the richest country in the world, almost without reference either to size or population. The revenue derived by her hereditary landowners is very considerable; but what is much greater still, is the tribute collected from all parts of the world by her princely merchants and money-dealers. As Taine remarks, "Enormous is the word that always recurs" in describing her general condition; her shipping, her traffic, her wealth are all enormous; and the greatness and happiness of her people are enormous also, notwithstanding all that her enemies may say in disparagement of them. Nor is that all. Her commercial correspondence has been extended to the utmost limits of the globe; and with her commodities and her manufactures she has been spreading her freedom and enlightenment in every direction, which has enabled her to effect the largest amount of good to the world. Are France and Germany as civilised as England? Possibly so; but they do not and cannot disseminate civilisation to the same extent that England does, because their connection with the world at large is not nearly so extensive.

The material grandeur of England is great; it is only equalled by her intellectual and moral grandeur, which are on a similar scale. The national

Digitized by Google

established religion is supported by the State; but apart from it, a large proportion of the middle and lower classes maintain beliefs and forms of worship peculiar to themselves, including Dissenters, Catholics, and Methodists—all classes of thinkers receiving toleration from the Government so long as they do not offend against public decency and the peace. This is a feature peculiar to England. It testifies to a moral independence that does not develop in other countries. As respects education, all the establishments for its diffusion are in the hands of the people, and are maintained in complete independence of the Government, being amenable to no authority but that of the law. The enormous self-reliance which this implies has also no counterpart in Europe. The palpable benefit of the arrangement is that it produces men in a higher degree than any other system. It is unnecessary to name here the worthies England has produced. Their name is legion; and they have won for her that foremost place in the foremost rank of nations which she undeniably holds. In her, more than in any other country, have letters been fully emancipated and made accessible to all classes of the people by the publication of newspapers, magazines, and reviews, through which the influence of learning has been immeasurably extended and all topics of interest made generally intelligible.

The opinion of England's physical strength is generally a very unfavourable one; and all over the Continent it is largely believed that she is now a first-rate power by sufferance only. No strength is allowed to her beyond what is attributable to her position; if she has been secure from danger, it is only because she is sea-girt. No attempt is made

Digitized by Google

to understand what she actually is, and whether her water-girdle alone by itself could have secured that pre-eminence to her. The advantage of being sea-girt doubtless made her a commercial power, and commerce gave her a maritime status which compelled the creation and maintenance of a navy. But if the navy had not been maintained, her sea-girt position alone would not long have secured her the respect she commands.

This navy, like English institutions generally, has been very long in formation. So early as the days of Alfred the necessity of maintaining a fleet of boats was recognised, the swarms of pirates that infested the northern seas in the Saxon times rendering it necessary to have in hand the means of opposing them on their own element. This led to the first formation of a regular navy, which in the time of John did him great service against the barons, notwithstanding that it was simultaneously attacked by Philip of France; and in the reign of Edward III. the first naval victory over the French was obtained off Sluys, and the first naval victory over the Spaniards off Espagnols, which obtained for Edward the title of "King of the Sea." There was no regular sea service, however, till the time of Henry VIII.; while Elizabeth was the first to establish a school of marines, in which were nurtured those daring vikings — Drake, Raleigh, Frobisher, and Hawkins. The expeditions for the discovery of the North-West Passage, many of which were undertaken at this period, formed the best sailors; and the Spanish Armada came against an enemy that was well prepared to receive it, even if the storms had not effectually interfered on his behalf. After this a long period elapsed before England was called

Digitized by Google

upon to encounter an equal peril, and, as usual with her, she suffered her navy to decline till the era of the Civil War. The exertions of Cromwell to improve it were particularly great, and the fleets under Blake and Deane disputed on equal terms with the Dutch fleets under Van Trompe and De Ruyter; but, in the time of Charles II., it came to be so utterly neglected that the Dutch were enabled easily to deal a home-thrust at England, and sweep the British seas in every direction, entering even the Thames with broomstick on their mast in defiance. This rendered a reorganisation of the fleet necessary during the long struggle maintained by William III. against Louis XIV.; and, by the reign of Anne, it became so efficient that the French were compelled to surrender to it their pretensions to the dominion of the seas. Sir George Rooke having at the same time taken Gibraltar, and Sir John Leake Minorca, the Mediterranean was converted into an English lake; since which time the naval power of England has ever retained a defiant and undisputed supremacy.

As we stated at the outset, those who wish to do so may here read the hand of Providence in every event that has occurred to consolidate the English power. At the Norman Conquest the winds aided the invaders, and William landed on the English coast when the Saxon king and his army and fleet were absent in the north; and so England was conquered. Almost at every subsequent invasion, or attempt at invasion, the winds were invariably favourable to England and adverse to her enemies. The design of Charles VI. of France to repeat the exploit of the Norman was entirely defeated by the north gale; the Spanish Armada was mainly de-

Digitized by Google

stroyed by the storms by which it was assailed from all sides; the threatened invasion of Louis XIV. was prevented by a strong wind from the north-west; at a later period the expedition sent by Alberoni from Spain was discomfited by a tempest; and, still later, Hochie was driven from the Irish coast, which he had all but reached, by a storm. This would seem to indicate a continuous interposition of Heaven in the establishment of the naval greatness of England, by warding off from her all the heavy blows aimed at her by her enemies. The strength thus attained seems now to be well established; and it is not likely that England will again, in a hurry, be exposed to dangers such as have been passed. Steam is said to have now bridged the Channel, by acting greatly as a safeguard against the weather, and rendering it unnecessary for the invading party to await a favouring breeze. But it has given England at the same time the enormous advantage of being able to block up her enemy's ports, at a moment's notice, without reference to the weather; and so long as her navy is as efficient as it is said to be, this alone will give her a preponderance of advantages.

But is the English navy in such a state of efficiency as is usually assumed? On this point there has been some difference of opinion; but none on the yet more important points, that England's materials for maritime strength have become virtually inexhaustible, and that it is only necessary that enough of these be kept in constant readiness for sudden emergencies. The mercantile fleet of England comprises about 22,000 sailing vessels and 4000 steamers, the total number of seamen employed being about 205,000, of whom 180,000 are

Digitized by Google

British born. The nearest approach to these figures, at a very considerable distance, are those furnished by the statistics of the United States; but the countries of Europe are nowhere for purposes of comparison. The bone and sinews of a navy are necessarily in the number of seamen a country can bring forward in her need, and in the celerity with which she can provide fit vessels and arms for them. As regards vessels, it is only necessary to observe that the passenger ships of England on any one "line" will bear a comparison, in numbers at least, with the national squadron of any other country; and that any number of additional ships of any strength can be constructed at the private dockyards in England at a moment's warning. Similarly, in the manufacture of war materials, England works cheaper and better than all the other powers; and her private firms can turn out on a pressure as much of them as all the Government manufactories in all the other countries taken together. Most of those other countries come to England for their ironclads and their guns; and those that do not, employ English engineers to work for them or instruct their workmen. With ships and materials of war, therefore, England can be sooner and better supplied than any country on the face of the earth.

As to the actual state of the British navy, it may be admitted that even now it has not attained any theoretical standard of perfection, though for all practical purposes it seems to be quite equal to any emergency. The only other naval powers of any pretensions are America, Russia, and France. The Americans themselves have of course loudly maintained that in shipbuilding, as in everything else, they have left the Britishers a long way behind;

Digitized by Google

while the truth is, that not more than one-fifth of their so-called navy is seaworthy, the remaining four-fifths being only fit to be sold as old iron. Russia has been building some large ships; but it is generally understood that these vessels have not answered expectations at all, and though they may prove well enough for coast defence, are not fit for anything else. The French vessels, if not absolutely rotten, are all obsolete, and would not long stand the booming of English guns. Germany has the nucleus of a good navy,—namely, a few good ships—but nothing that can cause any alarm to England. In the absence, therefore, of greater efficiency on the part of her probable enemies, the perfection England has attained may well be accepted as conclusive, since she has a large number of ships, most of which are in perfect condition.

The army of England is of course not very strong, and never was so. She has kept up an efficient navy only to protect her commerce, which is scattered all over the globe; but she does not seek for military renown; and her policy has always been deliberately and systematically to keep down her army, that she might devote all her energies to the development of the arts of peace. The navy, we have seen, began to be organised from the time of Alfred, the Saxon. The introduction of a standing army dates from a much later era. The Normans, and William the Conqueror pre-eminently, built castles and fortresses; but they had no standing army. They relied for the supply of troops on the aid of the feudal barons and other tenants of the Crown who held their fiefs on condition of military service; and also on bands of mercenary troops. The first regularly formed arm of the military service

Digitized by Google

was the archer-corps, which was introduced by the Normans for utilising the yeomen of England by training them to this service; and, in the old wars, this corps was always the most formidable on the field. The formation of a regular staff of officers for the army dates from the reign of Elizabeth, when it was organised in connection with the wars of the Dutch Protestants and the Huguenots, and those of the Netherlands with France. The great civil war called into active existence a deal of energy and excellence in all soldierly qualities; but these were not exercised against any foreign enemies, but only against each other at home. A fair army was formed by the reign of Anne, when the genius of Marlborough gave a prestige to the English arms, and shattered the power of the greatest European monarch of the day; and the success thus secured was transmitted to the era of the Georges, and culminated in the triumph gained at Waterloo. But it cannot be said that at any time of her history England has taken much pains to organise a grand army equal to, or approaching to an equality with, any of the great armies maintained on the Continent.

This has given rise to the wretched cant that the English are not a military nation. All that is true is that the English have never betrayed an appetite for glory and war. But they have at all times evinced self-sacrifice and enthusiasm in the military service of their country with an amount of physical courage that has never been surpassed. The victories of the English army are well known, and have already been cursorily referred to. The worst defeats of England were those sustained under the Duke of Cumberland at Fontenoy and Laupfelt, and

Digitized by Google

in his weak defence of Hanover against the French, which led to the ignominious capitulation of Closter-severn. With reference to the first two, the French commander, Marshal Saxe, candidly admitted that the British infantry did all that could have been done under the circumstances, and what no other troops in the world would have imitated; and greater praise from an enemy was never received. It is clear, therefore, that England has, in this respect also, the right materials to work with. The regular English army is, it is true, very inconsiderable, as compared with the armies kept up by Continental nations; and it is doubtful if England could materially augment its strength without interfering with her domestic and mercantile economy. But every Englishman knows how to fight; and the emigration statistics of Great Britain show to what extent her rank and file can be replenished in the hour of need by the payment of a liberal bounty. England has therefore no need to swell up her regular army with useless soldiers. The fears of sudden annihilation by a *coup de main* are childish and unworthy of being entertained. No great nation ever has been, or could be, suddenly wiped out. It is true that nations now arm themselves *en masse* for war, and seek once for all utterly to crush the adversary they have to deal with; but, in the case of Britain especially, no invader could ever come over *en masse* to the scratch, while it will always be in the power of the people invaded to rise *en masse* in their own defence. Besides that, as a nation of horsemen, the English can at all times improvise an invincible cavalry of any strength, which, under a bold leader, ought easily to beat

Digitized by Google

back twice the cavalry and four times the infantry that any enemy could bring against it. And except for self-defence England will never arm.

The general tenor of success on their side throughout the whole course of their national existence has made the English people believe themselves to be invincible; and the pride is not yet extinct which makes them assume that, in respect to physical strength and courage, one Englishman is equal to two men of any other country in the world. On the other hand, the peaceful occupation of the nation generally, and their aversion to assume a belligerent attitude, are marked; and all the Continental powers believe that England, in her quiescent state, already shows symptoms of decay. It is scarcely necessary to combat this latter belief. As a country devoted to peaceful occupations, England is naturally averse to take offence; and her first efforts to resent it when given are, as a rule, feeble, ill-directed, and abortive. But, if unprepared at the outset, she soon makes up her deficiencies by her imperturbable fortitude and perseverance; and in all wars she has hitherto always been successful at the end. The conclusion of the Crimean war, in which England figured so unfavourably, found Russia, not humiliated only, but also perfectly exhausted. In France the result was nearly as embarrassing, provision rising in price and capital being withdrawn from internal industry. But England did not suffer from the consequences to any perceptible extent. Her means and appliances were, on the contrary, augmented; and she found herself stronger at the end of the war than she was at the beginning of it. This is not a proof of decline. The preponderating evidence is all on the other

Digitized by Google

side. It is only under the house of Hanover that England has enjoyed the plenitude of her greatness. After a long trial of courage and patience was this greatness attained. It is yet too early to say that the hour of triumph has passed by. The constitutional liberty of the country and her indomitable energy still remain; and so long as they do remain, there can be no real decline in her power. Other countries, it may be, are gradually coming up to an equality with her; but there is no sign to indicate that her motion has become retrograde, or even that she has come to a halt. She has herself made the greatest noise of her disasters and shortcomings. She has not only detected her own deficiencies, but has made almost a parade of them on all occasions. No other country in the world can afford to do this. But is that a sign of decline, or of the greatest self-correcting vigour? In other countries victories are exaggerated, and defeats concealed or palliated. It is in England only that the most indubitable success is severely and even maliciously criticised.

There is no doubt, however, that old states do become effeminate by efflux of time, and first become stationary, and then begin to decline; while younger states, prompted by greater resources, wants, or energies, gradually rise to an equality with them, and eventually outstrip them in the race. Russia is the youngest of the European communities, and, with her increasing population and limitless territory, is not unlikely to outstrip the older states in time. The United States of America, from similar or still greater advantages, may similarly come to arrogate for themselves a position of pre-eminence. This is not in the power of England, or of any other country, to prevent. But the relative position of

Digitized by Google

the parties has not yet been so changed as to justify any fears of England being thrown backwards soon. The only thing against her is that her greatness is disproportioned to her size and population; but this does not necessarily imply that the time for rectifying the disproportion is at hand. Pitting the British empire as an aggregate against any other power, the preponderance still remains with her, and will do so for a long time to come; though, in the course of ages, it may be her lot to come down to a position nearer equality with a few of her rivals.

The general hatred of England all over Europe and America is well known; and there is no doubt that this has arisen mainly from the arrogance of the English character and the vituperations of the English press. It is also attributable to a feeling of envy common to all nations who see in England an advance too great for them to equal, and who therefore wish heartily that she may go down that they might thereby be enabled to overtake her. The crowing against her comes from every quarter. It is now the Gallic cock that sputters through the mouths of her strutting colonels, and boasts of being able to uproot the British Islands from their foundations in the sea; or it is the staid Prussian general or semi-military politician, who calculates on paper the feasibility of conquering England at this time of the day by invading it again in Norman fashion; or it is the Russian, who complacently praises his own moderation that prevents him from overrunning the diamond-paved shores of India; or it is the tall-talking Yankee who boasts of his ability to whip creation, Canada, and England out of existence. But which of these powers alone is at this moment equal to England? In England it is the genius of the

Digitized by Google

nation that rules, fights, and acts on every emergency; and the genius of a great nation pitted against the genius of one mind, however great—be it Napoleon's or Bismark's—cannot but be certain of success. No sudden blow, however great, could possibly paralyse the energies of a stubborn people like the English; no French, Prussian, or Russian victory could humiliate England except for the passing hour. A war with the United States would possibly be somewhat different; but, as yet, the old mother is more than a match for the virago that disowns her birth. One thing is certain—that the ruin of England, when it does come, will be a calamity to the world, which will not be remedied by the greatness either of Russia or America, or of any other country yet known to us.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

THE DEPENDENCIES OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE.

COLONISATION is an inseparable adjunct to every great state, but more especially to an insular kingdom of small size like the British Isles, the energies of which are circumscribed within a limited sphere. Every prosperous country has a tendency to become redundantly rich and redundantly peopled, and for these exuberances of wealth and population, new outlets must be found, new lands discovered and reclaimed, and the foundations laid for new communities. The prosperous manufacturer requires a wider sphere for the disposal of his wares than the home market affords; the prosperous merchant more extensive marts for profitable traffic; the wealthy capitalist an opener range for the investment of his superfluous wealth. Colonisation for these ends is the natural remedy of inevitable overgrowth; and the nation that has resort to it, instead of being weakened or impoverished, is only rendered stronger and richer by such depletion.

This has been the case pre-eminently with England. She has extended herself in every direction as widely as it was possible to do so, from the icy regions of the arctic to those of the antarctic circle;

Digitized by Google

from the East Indies on the one side, to the West Indies on the other; over every soil and in every clime, implanting or civilising, and in either case widely extending her language, laws, and liberties, and contributing to the wellbeing of the human race. Wondrous is the empire that has thus been established, and just the proud boast that on that empire the sun never sets; and the wealth which her dependencies bring her is so exuberant and diversified, that it has been correctly observed that there is absolutely no produce of nature that is not grown on British soil.

The rage for colonisation and distant possessions sprang into existence with the commencement of the seventeenth century, previous to which England was but a small insular kingdom that scarcely gave promise of the expansion it was destined to receive. At this period almost half the globe was divided by treaty, as well as by an order of the Vatican, between the two great empires of Spain and Portugal, when a strong contest for power arose, other nations having intermediately become anxious to share in their aggrandisement. Fortunately for England the age was that of the wise Elizabeth, who was encompassed by a bevy of administrators whose ability has perhaps never been equalled. They foresaw the coming events of the age, and directed all their energies to turn them into shape, founding the first steps of that greatness and maritime dominion which were subsequently attained. The progress of England was slow and gradual, but always well sustained, and everything gave way before it—the opposition alike of Spain, Portugal, Holland, and France.

The first colonies of Great Britain were the United States of America, to which we shall separately refer.

Digitized by Google

Since those States became independent, the chief colonies of Britain have comprised Canada, Australasia, the Cape of Good Hope, and the West Indies; while India, though not a colony, shines out from the centre of southern Asia as the brightest jewel of the British crown. As her hold of India gives Great Britain the greatest prominence in the scale of nations, as it has contributed most of all to augment both her wealth and her power, and as it has, moreover, opened all eastern Asia to European commerce and civilisation, we shall first notice this great dependency of the empire, before passing on to the colonies proper we have named.

India.

The history of the British empire in India has no parallel in the records of time, but much in regard to it does not require to be said in this place. The first appearance of the English on Indian soil was only as suppliants for the establishment of mercantile residencies, the suppliants being well armed, though at that time not dreaming of conquest or dominion. They were armed, not against the native races among whom they appeared, but against their European rivals, the Dutch and the Portuguese, with whom they were constantly at war. From these contests originated that military reputation which the English were soon enabled to establish in the East, and which led to their being courted, not only by the Great Mogul of India, but also by the Shah of Persia. Both those sovereigns utilised their services for the destruction of pirates, and, at the price of the aid thus given, many of the commercial advantages sought for by the adventurers were ob-

Digitized by Google

tained, with a local habitation in India which served as the nucleus from which they expanded. The English East India Company was formed in 1600, and its first trading fleet went out in the following year to commence operations on some of the islands to the south-west of the peninsula. The first factories on the mainland were established in Surat, Ahmedabad, and Cambay, in 1612; and in the next ten years some factories were also opened on the Coromandel coast. The construction of a fortified factory at Madraspatam was permitted in 1640, about which time permission was also obtained to set up a factory at Hooghly. Bombay was obtained in 1668 from the Portuguese, as part of the dowry brought in by the Infanta of Portugal on her marriage with Charles II. After this, the disruption of the Mogul empire led to the factories being armed; and the native powers which arose into existence from the ruins of the empire, appreciating the courage of the foreign merchants, were glad to enlist their assistance in their contests with each other—an assistance always rendered with alacrity, as serving to secure that commercial position which had already been established.

For the first hundred years the great rivals of the English in the East were the Dutch and the Portuguese. The French came in later, but soon succeeded, like the English, in securing a surer footing on the soil. The times were troublesome and critical, and things had come to that pass that any clever adventurer who could collect a force of irregular troops, or even a gang of robbers (and there was not much real difference between the two), could hope to found a sovereignty, as was actually done by Sivajee and Hyder Ally, and a host of others

Digitized by Google

of lesser name. The French were the first to discover that these native armies were not able to stand against European troops, but that they could be disciplined on the European model, and their services then utilised. They also discovered the art of setting the native powers against each other to weaken them; and, with these discoveries, they had every prospect of founding a permanent empire on the ruins of the Mogul throne. Their knowledge, however, did not long benefit them; it more fully benefited the English, who received it from them at second hand, and then adroitly turned it against them. The two powers established side by side in the country, and almost on an equal footing, soon found the expulsion of one of them to be an unavoidable alternative to both, and this brought them soon at loggerheads with each other, when they began to raise armies which were paid for by the princes whose causes they affected to support, while they fought on their own behalf. Another advantage simultaneously gained by both parties was that, on pecuniary payments failing, territorial assignments were obtained from the princes, which brought with them the exercise of civil as well as military power. The first English possessions on the Coromandel and Malabar coasts were, almost all of them, acquired in this manner. In Bengal the Dewanny was acquired from the hands of the expiring Mogul, when the assumption of such power had become necessary to the Company for self-preservation. The French power collapsed at about the same time, from 1760, after the battle of Wandewash, the last turning-point in a prolonged struggle which had been carried on with various vicissitudes for a long series of years. This led to the annexation of extensive territories to

Digitized by Google

the British settlement of Madras, and on these foundations was raised the stupendous power now owned by the British in India.

We have not dwelt on the question of right or wrong as connected with the acquisition of this authority by the British; it would be simply useless to discuss such a question now. All the proceedings of those days cannot be vindicated, and no one understands this better than the English, by whom Warren Hastings was impeached. But the existence of the English in India depended on the steps that were taken, and they have ever since endeavoured to make all the amends in their power for such injustice as was done to the country at the outset. The struggle with France was fierce and obstinate, and on both sides intrigue had as much play as force; and these intrigues were directed not only against the principals opposed, but also against their allies. In Bengal, the persecution of the Mahomedan rulers gave birth to reprisals on the part of the English, which were not perhaps as just as they were successful; but the enforcement of authority on a foreign soil always implies some injustice of this sort, and it must be admitted that the English name has not been altogether free from stain in this respect.

The sovereignty of the East India Company in India commenced from 1765, all the territory from Calcutta to Allahabad and Lucknow having been intermediately occupied. The Nabob of Bengal had in fact been so much reduced, that he was glad to purchase peace on any terms, and willingly paid all the charges of the war which made him a puppet in his own dominions; and the Court of Delhi was equally eager to confirm the conquerors in the pos-

Digitized by Google

sessions they had acquired. The political importance thus gained was so great that the Imperial Government now came forward to claim a share of it, and in 1773 it was determined in Parliament that all civil and military correspondence regarding India should be submitted to the king's ministers; that a supreme court of judicature should be sent out to India by the Crown; and that the country should be divided into three presidencies, and made subject to a Governor-General and Council, the former of whom was to be approved by the king. The administrative arrangements have since then been considerably modified and improved; and from the Sepoy war of 1857-58, the direct management of the country has been assumed by the British Crown, and devolves on a special Secretary of State.

The first native attempt to overturn the British power was that made by Hyder and Tippoo, sovereigns of Mysore, at the instigation of the French. Then followed the attempts made by the Mahrattas and their great chiefs named Scindia and Holkar. These were succeeded by the aggressions of the Pindaris, a set of freebooters actively abetted by the Mahratta princes. On the outskirts of the country the English had also to fight the Nepalese and the Burmese. All these may be received as indications that the native races did not relish the dominion of Great Britain, and did not accept it without demur, and that the imposition of it on them, notwithstanding such sanguinary protests, was only an unjustifiable assertion of the doctrine of Might. This doubtless was so; but, having obtained the sovereignty of the country, England was no longer in a position to recede.

But though the rule of England in India was thus

Digitized by Google

based on force, which is at all times more or less inexcusable, it has, nevertheless, practically been very kind, just, and beneficent. Up to this day its character is that of pure despotism, but civil, not military, and regulated by great wisdom and leniency. History gives no example of a conquest so completely turned to the good of the vanquished. What was the country before, under the domination of the Afghans, Moguls, and Mahrattas, but a theatre of perpetual anarchy and confusion? What is it now? A mutiny or rebellion has passed over it. Did any sane man in it believe that any native king would have governed it as well as it was governed by strangers? Under them the entire country is at peace, from one extremity of it to the other. With a few isolated spots on the frontier excepted, this has been the case for a long series of years. When was this the case before? The Suttee, infanticide, and human sacrifices have ceased. Irregular exactions have been superseded by a regular taxation. All the races in the land are being initiated in civilisation. Justice is afforded to rich and poor alike, where injustice and oppression were triumphant for ages. Schools have been set up in every nook and corner; while three universities, one in each Presidency, superintend the education of the higher classes.

It is said that the people have not yet got reconciled to English rule; but this is only true after great qualifications. The government of a foreign people, however liked, will only be borne so long as it is enforced, or so long as the people believe that it will or can be enforced. The prestige of the English name after the suppression of all internal opposition, was well established, and there was a

Digitized by Google

contented submission everywhere from that time. This was disturbed by the Afghan war. Under the influence of an attack of Russophobia, Afghanistan was invaded with the avowed object of expelling from it the reigning sovereign and setting up in his place a British puppet; and to this end Ghazni was taken and occupied. The indignant Afghans repelled the outrage both by violence and deceit; upon which a capitulation to evacuate the country was signed. The evacuation was met by faithless onslaughts, the whole of the retreating army was assassinated, all the women were taken prisoners—many of whom were never rescued. An avenging army went to repair a mischief that did not admit of being repaired. Kabool was reoccupied, and a great part of the country was overrun and laid waste; but the country was found untenable, and the avenging army had to be withdrawn. The great mistake of accepting a position in which the British power appeared to be weaker than that to which it was opposed, was not rectified; the prestige of the English name was lost. It has not yet been fully re-established.

The first result of the Afghan war was the contumacy of the Ameers of Scinde, a kind of feudal lords who occupied the lower delta of the Indus. They were easily conquered and their country taken—an arrangement which Sir Charles Napier, who recommended and gave effect to it, could only defend "as a very advantageous, useful, and humane piece of rascality." The next affair was more complicated—namely, the quarrel with the Sikhs. They attacked British territory, and were repelled and their power overthrown,—but after such hard fighting as had not been witnessed in India since

Digitized by Google

the days of Lake and Wellesley. We cannot help stating it, but it is a fact, that this semi-barbarous people fought more heroically for their homesteads than did the French against the Germans in the last war.

These victories went a great way in reimpressing on the native mind the invincibility of the British arms. But, as we have said already, that end has not yet been fully attained. The annexation of Oude on the mere pretext of misgovernment was sufficient to lead to the Sepoy war, the Sepoy having imbibed the notion that, if he only resisted as the Afghans did, the English would disappear. The suppression of the revolt has quieted men's minds for the time; but it takes a much longer time to re-establish a good name than to lose it, and it cannot yet be said that the English are so much feared in India now as they used to be; and this is the real source of their weakness there.

As for invasion from without, it is only interested parties that revive the old fears about them from time to time, in the hope of being able to force on their Government the adoption of such measures as would enhance the value of their services at the cost of the State. The wish of the Russians to invade India is a pure myth; nor could they take it if they wished it. All that they could do, if they were really so foolish as to attempt it, would be to bring down a weary and exhausted army to the banks of the Indus, to find there their graves. Vambery significantly points out that Russia would not have to bring down forces from St Petersburg or Moscow, but only from the Siberian forts and from her stand-points in Central Asia. But what is the strength of her garrisons there? In Central

Digitized by Google

Asia she has never yet been able to muster in greater strength than is represented by 20,000 fighting men. Will an army of that strength or twice that strength, or three times that strength, conquer India? The military force of Britain in India consists, in round numbers, of 60,000 European troops and 125,000 native troops, besides which there are about 300,000 native troops maintained by the feudatory chiefs, more than half of which would be available to the British Government in time of need. All these are well-disciplined forces, not likely to be vanquished before they are considerably outnumbered.

Of course Russia can outnumber these forces by bringing down the Afghans with her. The Afghan is vengeful, and still harps on the Kabool massacres, which have not yet been avenged. "Come, let us go and plunder India together," would be an invitation which the wild mountaineers would never refuse. But, thus brought down, how are they to be forced back again? They have more claims on India than Russia has, having in times past given conquerors and rulers to the land. Long before India was well occupied, the allies would be quarrelling on the merest trifle, and then it would be the Russians, not the Afghans, that would have to retire.

Perhaps greater danger to India may be apprehended from a Russo-American alliance, and the termagant young lady across the Atlantic would not be very unwilling, perhaps, to lend herself to any enterprise that would embarrass her thriving mother. But Russia, if not infatuated, will think twice before embarking on such an enterprise, as the struggle would necessarily be long and obsti-

Digitized by Google

nate, and a protracted war with England is what Russia will be least able to maintain. Even the French were unable to carry on such a war with England when they both contested for supremacy in India; and the extent to which Russia broke down after the Crimean war would seem to indicate that it would be hopeless for her under great reverses to prevent her own combustion. The Czar, says Vambery, is constructing railways to facilitate the passage of pilgrims to holy places and of soldiers to India. Be it so. If England can properly utilise the strength she has in India itself, she will be quite able to repel all the Cossacks that the Czar could bring against her. Armed with Snider rifles, the Punjabees and Rajpoots—leaving aside the Mahomedans, who need not be trusted—will be more than a match for such soldiers as the Cossacks.

But are not Vambery and the other Russophobists mistaking Russia's object altogether? A regular army can now, says Vambery, be transported in twenty days from the shores of the Caspian to Herat. But Herat is not the key to India, as was long erroneously supposed. Across Afghanistan is a wild raid to ride. People who talk of the march from Herat to India appear to forget how the army of Napoleon I. fared on its invasion of Russia; and yet that was an invincible army led on by the greatest warrior of the age, with generals subordinate to him almost as able as their chief. An army that attempted to cross over Afghanistan to come to India would fare much worse. Herat, therefore, does not open India to the invader in the least. It only opens Russia's path to Persia. If it be that Russia is only preparing for the thorough and simultaneous subversion of the Mahomedan power in

Digitized by Google

Turkey and Persia, England has no call to oppose her to thwart that consummation. She has got a very turbulent Mahomedan population in India to control, which will be less so when the Turks and the Persians cease to be independent; and for the preservation of the balance of power in Europe, Britain has no particular need to interfere, since no one has more heavily freighted that balance than herself.

Of course it is in the power of Russia to provoke a collision with the English if, knowing her risks, she chooses to do so; and this may convulse India and throw back her civilisation for half a century; but it can do nothing more. The people of India as a rule are contented, if not happy, under their present rulers. The Hindu races have no particular reason to hate them, and freely admit in their own way that the white monkeys are zealously working for their civilisation. Some Hindus, it is true, joined the sepoy revolt, but only as dupes; and they well remember the lesson that was taught them on that occasion, and are not likely to rise again. The approach of the Russians may make the Mahomedans restive; but it is not probable that even they would prefer the Russians as masters instead of the English; and though they may wish to fight for their own hand, in that they know they have not the slightest chance of success. Russia would not back them to restore Mahomedanism to India, and the Mahomedans would not submit to the Russians with any better grace than they submit to the English. Were it possible, then, to shake the firm seat of England in India even for a time, it would only be to wear out the Russian and Moslem powers against each other.

Digitized by Google

The territories held by England in India comprise an area at least eight times as large as that of Great Britain and Ireland, with a population four times as numerous, the latest returns giving the population of the British territory in India alone at one hundred and ninety-five millions. The natives of the country suffice for the cultivation of the soil and the development of its resources, while the service of the Government and the occupations of trade find employment for the large number of Europeans now supported by it. The revenue of India amounts to about fifty millions sterling; and if the expenditure comes up to a nearly equal sum, or between forty-six and forty-eight millions, that includes the handsome remuneration paid to Europeans for service and on other accounts, by which Great Britain is largely and directly benefited. The imports of merchandise to India are valued at about forty millions, and the exports from it at about sixty millions. A dependency so rich was never possessed by any country before: well governed and consolidated, it would make a first-class power of itself; and fully does it account for the envy with which the success of the English in India is regarded by other nations. But what other nation would have proved equal to the trust, and have done half as much good to the country held under subjection in return for the advantages reaped from it? The people of India had a civilisation of their own when they were subdued, and this accounts for Christianity not having been able to supersede Brahmanism or Buddhism: but, short of that, the teachings of the English have been fully appreciated, and are emulated and followed, and even the ethics of the English code are now in

Digitized by Google

the ascendant in a country which had long retained a name for perjury and dishonesty. And through India, all this civilisation has, to the glory of England, been refracted to China, Japan, Siam, and Persia.

Canada.

Of colonisation proper the noblest result obtained by England was the formation of the United States of America, which have since become independent. Notwithstanding their defection, however, a very fair portion of the North American continent is still an integral part of the British empire, adding to it an area of three and a half million square miles, and a population which has already risen to above four millions. The Canadian Dominion, as this territory is now called, comprises Canada (East and West), New Brunswick, Nova Scotia, Prince Edward Island, and Cape Breton, with the whole of Hudson Bay territory, which is almost uninhabited. The first of these, Canada, was so named by the Spaniards (Capo di Nada, or the Cape of Nothing) when they went to it in search of gold and were disappointed. The first to settle in it were the French, who named it Nouvelle or New France. A party of convicts colonised it so early as 1598; but no regular settlement was formed till 1608, or about the time when the Pilgrim Fathers went out from Britain to colonise New England. The wars between the English and the French were at this time very frequent, and the French colonies in America came thus to be several times taken and given back. Canada was finally wrested from France by General Wolfe, in 1759, and formally

Digitized by Google

ceded by the treaty of 1762. At this time all its wealth consisted of the skins of the bear, the beaver, the buffalo, the fox, the marten, the minx, and the wolf. The wealth and resources of Canada now are quite equal to what the wealth and resources of the United States were at the commencement of their career of independence. Next to England and the United States she has the largest mercantile marine in the world.

New Brunswick and Nova Scotia were both portions of New France or Acadia, and were colonised in 1604. After having been lost and restored on diverse occasions, they were finally transferred to Great Britain in 1713, though they continued to be a source of contest ever after, till 1762, or the time when Canada was formally ceded. Prince Edward Island had been little used by the French, and was not settled till after the conquest of Acadia by Great Britain, when many of the French colonists crossed over the narrow strait to occupy it. It fell into the hands of the English in 1758, when Cape Breton also was taken.

The Hudson Bay territory was named after Hudson, who proceeded in that direction in 1610, on an expedition in search of a north-west passage to India. In 1670, a company, called the Hudson Bay Company, was formed for the appropriation of this *terra incognita* and the development of commerce in it. These owners held under the words of their charter all the lands and territories lying within the entrance of Hudson Strait not already owned by Great Britain or actually possessed by any other state—that is, all the tract from Labrador and the Atlantic Ocean to British Columbia and the Pacific, the total area of which was equal to about

Digitized by Google

one-half of Russia, and to thrice the size of India. Of course the Company could make no use of such vast possessions, though they held them for nearly two centuries. All their operations were confined to the carrying on a trade in furs with the Indian tribes residing in the country, which gave them very large profits — so much as fifty per cent— to secure which, and prevent the country being colonised, the worst reports about it were sedulously propagated. It is only six years since this vast territory was transferred to the Dominion of Canada. Its present condition is very similar to that of Asiatic Russia, which it resembles also in respect to climate and soil, and in the possession of vast forests and immense rivers. In winter the southern part of the territory is usually covered with one foot, and the northern with four feet, of snow— so much as twenty feet of snow being seen at times in some places. But the Indians nevertheless affirm that, naked as they are, they suffer more from heat than cold. All these tracts at present are nearly waste; but the completion of the railways now in hand will open them out largely for occupation and culture.

The surrender of Canada to England in 1759 was burdened with about 60,000 French inhabitants and above 8000 converted Indians, who became subjects of Great Britain, and took the usual oath of allegiance. But the troubles in store for them were heavy. Montcalm, on being defeated by Wolfe, predicted that the conquest of Canada by England would endanger her retention of the New England colonies, which already betrayed much impatience of restraint, that had hitherto been controlled by their fears of the French. Within thirteen years

Digitized by Google

after the surrender of Canada this prediction was fulfilled. The Canadians, among whom a civil government had then only recently been established, were asked by the revolted States to join them in their rebellion, or at any rate to remain neutral during the war; but this they refused. This led to an attack of Canada, which was indignantly repelled. The country suffered much by the war; but its gain was greater from the loyalty displayed by it. Hitherto the general impression had been that Canada was in a state of dormant insurrection, and people from Great Britain were averse to proceed to it. It was now found that the case was otherwise, and emigration in large numbers was commenced, which materially contributed to strengthen it. The Government aided these emigrants by the grant of free passage, the free gift of rations and tools on arrival, and the gift of one hundred acres of land to each individual; by which means the number of English colonists was so considerably augmented, that, by 1783, it was found to be fully equal to the number of French colonists, or those who claimed descent from the French. Between these different races, however, no great friendship was formed. The success of the English adventurers in all the enterprises they undertook filled the French with envy and hatred; while the English, on their part, looked down on them with their usual arrogance and scorn.

After the declaration of American independence, Canada was, in 1791, divided into two distinct provinces called Upper or West Canada, and Lower or East Canada, the former being inhabited by the English colonists, and the latter by the French. A representative Assembly was at the same time given to each, a boon which the French Canadians

Digitized by Google

did not at that time appreciate; and in 1807 there was an open rupture between the House of Assembly of Lower Canada and its Legislative Council, which led to the Assembly being dissolved. The position of the colony was somewhat bettered in 1811; but dissatisfaction still continued, and the Americans sought to profit by it during their second war with Great Britain, in 1812. A fresh invasion of Canada was attempted—or rather a series of invasions—which fared no better than the first. The Canadians only wanted justice from England, but had neither sympathy for the American character nor regard for American institutions. They still liked their dependency to England well enough, or, at all events, were not willing to be absorbed into the United States; and not only were the invasions of America repelled, but the scene of war was transferred to the enemy's country, Washington being attacked and captured, after which peace was willingly concluded by the United States.

The loyalty of the Canadians was for a long time ill requited, and the French Canadians especially suffered most from domestic troubles. In both Upper and Lower Canada violent antagonism was established between the official and non-official classes, by the power exercised by the Legislative Councils over the Houses of Assembly. Lower Canada complained, but submitted to this unjust arrogation of authority; Upper Canada threatened an insurrection and amalgamation with the United States. The rebellion in the latter lasted for three days, and induced the mother country to send out a Governor-General over all the provinces of British North America for the adjustment of differences.

Digitized by Google

A second revolt was attempted in the neighbourhood of Montreal, but did not ripen.

The suggestions made by the Earl of Durham, the Governor-General referred to, for improving the condition of Canada, were adopted in 1839. The two provinces of it were now reunited, and made subject to one legislative and administrative system; and the class interests of the colony, which had formed the chief point of discord, were broken up by the free admission of the French Canadians into the Legislative Council. The subsequent progress of the country has been very rapid. In 1867 all the British colonies in North America were confederated under the designation of the Canadian Dominion, and since then the tide of emigration has become so strong, that the population of Canada is now increasing more rapidly even than that of the United States. The field, of which no adequate use has yet been made, is extensive, and the prize held out to the starving population at home is so enticing, that the future of Canada cannot but be very hopeful. Of vast tracts between Labrador and Columbia, the only inhabitants now are the wild Indians, who in no degree occupy them fully, even when they are not continually wandering from place to place. These are more attached to the English than they ever were to the French, or are to the Americans elsewhere on the continent; but they are generally so barbarous, and so resolutely prefer to die than accept European civilisation, that most probably they will eventually have to disappear. The preservation of the savage races, and their amalgamation with their conquerors, may possibly have been, as has been frequently alleged, an object

Digitized by Google

sought for by statesmen of every party; but the English settlers do not appear ever to have been very partial to the idea, and in every place the savages have vanished, or are vanishing, from the face of the earth. Direct hostility to them, however, cannot be charged against the English—at least in the present day; and if they are retreating before them, it is of their own accord. So far as Canada is concerned, their final disappearance is a distant contingency to consider. As yet there is ample room for all comers, without infringing on the rights of the native inhabitants; vast tracts on every side await to be tilled, and vast resources and mines of wealth remain to be utilised. The commercial value of the country, as developed at present, already shows the exports to Britain to be worth about five millions sterling, and the imports thence about six and a half millions. The aggregate value of Canadian commerce, including all imports and exports, was forty-eight millions in 1873.

The prevalent disease of the hour in respect to India is Russophobia. A similar disease prevails in respect to Canada, which we may call Americophobia. The relations of Canada with the United States have never been very friendly. During the civil war between the North and the South, Canada sympathised with the cause of the secession, and a great number of her citizens aided the Confederates. The irritation in the United States thus created still continues, though outwardly good terms have continued to be kept by both parties. A treaty is now under discussion for securing a reciprocal concession of fishing rights, by which Canada will virtually surrender a most lucrative monopoly to purchase a free trade with the States, which may or may not be

Digitized by Google

advantageous enough to outweigh her certain loss. But the good feeling of the Americans can never be purchased; no amount of concession or bribery will ever secure it. In season and out of season they are always boasting that they have only to stretch forth their hands to take possession of Canada, although they were twice beaten back from it; and the English nation generally have made up their minds to believe in the boast. It was at one time seriously contemplated to make over Canada to the French in exchange for their possessions in India; but to this the French did not agree, because Pondicherry yields a large revenue, which Canada does not. It is fortunate that the negotiations came thus to be broken off. The shame of England would have been indelible if a colony had been abandoned where the English name promises to be perpetuated in the new world, as it will be in the old world in Australasia. In a short time the Canadians will be fully able to take care of themselves; and it is only to be hoped that till then England will stand by them for all the tall talk of the United States. Nations, like individuals, are best kept up to the mark by a spirit of rivalry. This spirit has already arisen between the Canadians and the Yankees. It may improve both. The constitution of Canada is very nearly the same as that of England, and better than that of America. Will the Americans borrow from the Canadians that which they will not accept from England?

Australasia.

Australia is the largest island in the world, so large that it is correctly called an island-continent.

Digitized by Google

It is nearly 3000 miles from east to west, and about 2000 miles from north to south, its total area being not less than three-fourths of Europe. The whole of this superficial extent, however, is not available for colonisation, a great portion of the interior being hopelessly barren and impassable, forming a hollow basin of sand in dry weather, and a shallow inland sea during the rains. Immediately to the south of Australia is the island of Van Diemen's Land, or Tasmania, which is about the size of Ireland; and to the east of Van Diemen's Land is New Zealand, which, with the entire group of islands belonging to it, is nearly equal in area to Great Britain. All these have been colonised by Great Britain, and form, as it were, one family group, though some of the settlements are very much in advance of the rest.

Australia was first discovered by the Spaniards in 1606, but was explored much later, between 1616 and 1627, by the Dutch, who gave it the name of New Holland. In 1770, Captain Cook touched upon the eastern coast of the island, at the bay which, from the number of curious wild flowers in it, he called Botany Bay. Sixteen years later, the independence of America having closed the great outlet by which the mother country had till then thrown out her criminal population, the question of colonising Botany Bay was considered, and the first batch of convicts was sent out in 1787, and landed at Sydney in the following year. Thus was New South Wales first colonised as a convict settlement only; and this character was retained by it till 1821.

Van Diemen's Land was first discovered by the Dutch in 1642, but was not then known to be an

Digitized by Google

island, being taken for a projection of New Holland. It came to be recognised as an island in 1798, six years after which it was taken possession of in the name of the British Crown, when the colonies of Hobart Town and George Town were founded, the settlers consisting entirely, as in the case of New South Wales, of convicts and the soldiers in charge of them.

The first settlements in Australia thus founded were necessarily exceedingly corrupt; and this corruption was increased by every fresh batch of convicts afterwards sent out to them. The first free settlers arrived in New South Wales in 1798, the concessions granted to them consisting of free passage, free gift of tools and implements, free gift of land, supply of necessary provisions for two years, and supply of convict labour for the same period for purposes of cultivation. Besides free emigrants, many of the old soldiers and officers, and some of the released convicts, had grants of land given to them; and six years later, in 1804, a batch of Scotch Presbyterians went out, who established themselves near Portland Head, holding out a praiseworthy moral example to the piebald community around them. Almost the first respectable settlers were thus Scotch farmers, whose industry was crowned with the greatest success. After this free settlers in small batches continued to go out from year to year, till the tide of emigration attained its full strength, the batches increasing in number, and taking out with them the luxuries and refinements of the mother country, if not also a modicum of her wealth.

In their infancy, the colonies, of course, suffered greatly from various privations and disabilities.

Digitized by Google

Famines were frequent, and factions perpetual, where the population were generally depressed by poverty, and where their morals were necessarily very low. The first difficulty to overcome was to make the colony produce a sufficiency of food to supply its wants; and it took some time to make farmers out of pickpockets. But the natural fertility of the country was so great, that no difficulty of this sort could last long.

In 1821 the convicts in New South Wales formed more than two-thirds of its entire population; in 1828 they were hardly more than half; in 1833 they were about one-third only; and in 1839 less than one-fourth. From 1840 New South Wales ceased to be a place to which convicts were sent. After this, especially from 1847, the tide of emigration became almost continuous, the culminating point being reached in 1851, when the cry of "Gold in Australia" caused a rush of adventurers, which resulted in the rapid construction of towns and cities, and in the formation of an adequate government. Centuries would have scarcely sufficed to give the colonies that population and that fair start into existence which the cry of "Gold" called forth.

Long previous to this date the colony began to break up into sections as the dimensions and capabilities of the territory came to be understood, and as the number of settlers began to multiply. The divisions now are seven—namely, New South Wales, Tasmania or Van Diemen's Land, South Australia, Victoria, Queensland, West Australia, and New Zealand, the whole being known by the general name of Australasia. Van Diemen's Land separated from New South Wales in 1824; South Australia in

Digitized by Google

1834; Victoria in 1851, in consequence of the "gold fever;" and Queensland in 1859. The Swan River Settlement, or Western Australia, has existed as a distinct colony from 1829, and is known as the least prosperous of all the colonies. Its natural capacities are not inconsiderable, and the climate is healthy; but the rapacity of the upper settlers, and the bad faith of the labouring classes towards their masters, early converted it into a scene of misery and desolation. Seeing that it did not prosper, the colonists themselves petitioned for the transportation of convicts to the settlement, which was willingly acceded to, as all the other colonies had by that time refused to take any. For a long time this was the only portion of the continent to which criminals were conveyed; but the concession had eventually to be withdrawn at the entreaty of the inhabitants of Victoria, who resented the coming among them of runaway or liberated convicts from the west.

The case of New Zealand is very dissimilar from that of the other settlements. It is about the latest in the order of colonisation, but almost the first in the prospects of success. The forests in it are abundant, and shipbuilding has become an important branch of trade in it. In all other respects, also, the colony is flourishing. Its peculiarity of position arises only from the unfriendliness of feeling subsisting in it between the English settlers and the natives. The former are called Pakehas, and the latter Maoris—a bold people, who derive their descent from the Malayan race. For some reason or other the two races have never been able to agree. The missionaries have been doing a great deal of good in the country, but the conduct of the Pakeha traders has been such as to wipe off the

Digitized by Google

favourable impressions thus made; and a war to the knife has been going on for several years between the contending parties, which will probably not cease till the Maoris are exterminated, to the eternal disgrace of the English name. The colony was formally established in 1840; the number of European settlers in it amounts to about 256,000; the number of Maoris yet living is about 37,000.

Leaving aside the exceptional case of the Swan River Settlement, the success of colonisation in Australasia has been unprecedentedly signal. Everywhere the advance has been steady, in some places astounding; and it has been great in all respects—social, commercial, and agricultural. The climate of the country differs widely in different places, as it must where the area is so extensive; but much the greater part of the territory best known is healthy and agreeable, while some places are regarded as the best in the world, especially portions of New Zealand, which are considered to be very favourable to longevity. The fertility of the soil, so far as the coast-line on which the several settlements have been made is concerned, has already fully vindicated itself. All the country that yet remains in a state of nature is known to the colonists by the expressive name of the "bush;" and the capabilities of these tracts remain to be ascertained: but, in the places already colonised, most of the productions of Great Britain are raised, and many others—especially cotton—which will not grow in Britain. The chief wealth of Australasia, however, consists in its flocks and herds; and the rapidity with which the stock in them will increase is marvellous. Millions of pounds of wool are annually exported to England from a quarter where there

Digitized by Google

was not a single sheep before the colony of New South Wales was started some eighty-six years ago. Cows and horses thrive well, but best on natural pastures. A few tame cattle having strayed away from one colony into the bush, were found in a few years to have multiplied into a large herd on the thick and luxuriant grass that surrounded them. The mineral products of the country are at the same time various and considerable. The gold-mines of Victoria and Queensland have already reduced the value of gold all over the world. Copper and lead have also been discovered, and the mines are being worked successfully; and coal likewise has been found, particularly in New South Wales. All things taken together, the colonies have run a race of prosperity unmatched in the annals of any nation. The entire resources of Australia have not yet been discovered; but it has already been found that a vast population can be maintained in it in comfort, even though the central parts of the island should prove to be utterly uninhabitable. The total population of all the colonies already amounts to about 3,000,000; while the total revenue raised in them is about £12,000,000. The extent of land under cultivation is nearly 4,500,000 acres, by far the largest portion of it being in South Australia and New Zealand. New South Wales has by far the largest stock of horses, and Victoria the largest after it. In cattle, also, New South Wales takes the lead; but Victoria has the largest number of sheep. The total value of exports amounts to about £42,000,000, and the total amount of imports to about £43,000,000. Nor is the value of the settlements to be appraised wholly by their commercial worth. In them England is refounding

Digitized by Google

herself in the East, as she is also doing in the West in Canada; and when the mother country shall have ceased to exist, she will still live in her children, perhaps even then the most dominant race in the world.

The form of government in Australasia was at the outset the same in all the settlements, the Governor representing the British Crown, and carrying on his duties with the assistance of councils appointed by the Crown. But subsequently the English Government wisely conceded to the colonists the privilege of framing constitutions for themselves; and this permission they have availed themselves of by setting up their own representative assemblies, and appointing their own responsible executive officers. The constitutions framed are nearly, though not precisely, alike. In New South Wales and Queensland there are two Houses of Parliament, of which one is composed of Crown nominees, and the other of members elected by universal suffrage. The constitution of New Zealand is very similar, and the House of Representatives in it includes four Maori members. In South Australia and Van Diemen's Land the old legislative councils have been reorganised and a House of Assembly created, the members of both of which are elected by the people. Western Australia is administered by a Governor, having a council of eighteen members, of whom six are appointed by the Crown and twelve by the people. In Victoria both the legislative chambers are elected wholly by the colonists, the Governor acting only as their chairman; so that virtually the constitution of Victoria is purely democratic, at the same time that it is thoroughly loyal. The safest course for all the settlements is to continue to adhere to the constitu-

Digitized by Google

tion of the mother country as closely as differences of circumstances will allow. Sooner or later they will probably become confederated, like the Dominion of Canada.

The advances made in social matters in Australasia have been considerable. Literature, the sciences, and the arts, can as yet number but few votaries among the colonists, for the simple reason that the universal scramble for wealth did not allow of much time being devoted to such pursuits. But all this will come in, as in other places, in usual course. The preparatory steps for such advancement have already been taken; and schools and universities have been set up, which are said to be almost as good as those of the mother country. Everything, in fact, wears a smiling prospect; even crime, in a population partly descended from convicts, being less in proportion than in England. The only one drawback to be regretted is the antagonism between the white race and the aborigines, where it does exist, for which no remedy has yet been discovered. In the English colonies this has not assumed the proportion it has attained in the United States, the principle that the race of barbarians must perish if incapable of civilisation being, at this moment at least, an exclusively Yankee one. In Van Diemen's Land, the natives, after much contention, have entered into a peaceful agreement with the colonists, to which both parties have faithfully adhered. The colonists in Australia proper have not been altogether so considerate; but the interior of the island is so extensive, that colonisation and barbarism may yet for a long time find ample room in it to cultivate the triumphs of uninterference, if not of concord. In New Zealand only have philosophy

Digitized by Google

and humanity failed to tolerate the vices of the Maori character, and thus raised the question whether British philanthropy, placed under temptation, is really better than that of the Americans.

Minor Colonies.

Among the minor colonies of Great Britain are the West Indies, the west coast of Africa, the Cape of Good Hope, Ceylon, the Straits Settlements, Hong-Kong, and Mauritius. It is scarcely necessary to refer to any of these in detail. The West Indies will always be remembered in connection with the frequent fighting there between the English and the Spaniards in the olden times, out of which grew the subsequent colonisation of the American continent by England; and also for the grand buccaneering expeditions of the great English captains, Drake and others, who, in their day, imitated the adventures of their ancestors the vikings, and contributed largely, in that way, to the downfall of the Spanish power. Later, these islands, the aboriginal population of which perished early under a system of forced labour, became the theatre of that traffic in slaves, in which England was the last to participate, and which she was the first to abandon; for which her name will be remembered when all her battles and conquests shall have been forgotten. The west coast of Africa was the great field of the slave-trader during the times referred to, though its chief attraction now is on the Gold Coast, where gold is collected in small quantities. The Cape Settlement belonged originally to the Dutch, but after hard fighting was ceded to Britain in 1815. Its limits were subsequently extended by the addition of Kaffraria, the inhabitants of which had been

Digitized by Google

enemies to the Dutch, and were, for that wise reason, treated as such by the English, till they were compelled to submit and become peaceful subjects. Ceylon was the island-home of the giant Rávana, whose conquest by Ráma has been immortalised by Válmik. The more modern name of Rávana's city was Anuradpoora, the ruins of which covered sixteen square miles, and exhibited remains of splendid architecture, of which some stoutly built of granite are yet extant. The island was first held by the Portuguese, and afterwards by the Dutch, from whom it was wrested by the English in 1795. The Straits Settlements were also acquired from the Dutch; Hong-Kong from the Chinese; Mauritius from the French. Where, in all the world, can we point to another empire as extensive, and which is now as hopeful and flourishing, as that of which the dependencies have been named?

England with her colonies is great among the greatest powers, though without her colonies she would not be so little as some people are pleased to imagine. Almost all these colonies are inexpensive to the mother country, and self-reliant; the total value of their commerce, including both imports and exports, already exceeds 150 millions sterling; and yet have they been frequently complained of as encumbrances, and every now and then the question is raised and discussed of allowing them to go free. If they really sought their independence England could not oppose their wishes, as she did in the case of the United States. The lesson then learnt has in all respects been a salutary one, and cannot be forgotten. The loss of America did not impair the greatness of England; and it is well understood that the loss of Canada and Australasia would not do so now. Whether free of her or not, the interests of

Digitized by Google

the colonies would for years remain identical with those of the mother country, and the material loss to the latter would therefore be nominal. It looks better, however, as it is; the queen of the deep occupies her natural position when girt round by powerful dependencies; and no cause has yet arisen for throwing them overboard so long as they are unwilling to part from her.

The cry of the defencelessness of the colonies has been frequently raised in justification of the proposals to abandon them. It is asked, "If war breaks out, can England protect them all?" Perhaps not: but that is no argument for sending them adrift. With an empire so wide as hers, England cannot possibly have appliances ready to defend every place immediately at need. But if her appliances of defence be incomplete, no other nation has the necessary appliances of offence to place her in difficulties. It is true that England cannot at one and the same moment protect all her colonies, east and west. But where is the enemy able to attack them all? Absolute security in case of war for a dominion so widespread can never be prearranged. But England can do what no other power can do equally well. She can at once close up all the ports of her most offensive enemy, and prevent his doing mischief, till adequate defences are improvised. Even this would leave the commerce both of the mother country and her dependencies exposed on the high seas; for a universal commerce can never be adequately protected. It is for this reason, and this only, that England so meekly puts up with insult and annoyance from the more quarrelsome powers. In this sense, but in none other, is the extent of her dominion the cause of her weakness.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

We do not give precedence to the United States of America over France, Germany, and Russia, under any impression of the superiority of the former over any of the latter, but simply that our notice of the Anglo-Saxon race may be continuous and uninterrupted.

The first colonisation of America from Europe appears to have been made by the vikings or Normans, in the tenth century, after they had founded settlements in Iceland and Greenland. The discovery of Iceland is attributed to a Norwegian freebooter, who was obliged to leave his native country on account of his lawlessness, and whose son, Eric Red, following his example, was outlawed from Iceland, upon which he went out and discovered Greenland. From this last-named place Lief, the son of Eric, passed over to Newfoundland, and afterwards to the American coast, where he explored all the tract between the present site of Boston and that of New York, founding a colony which was named Vineland, on account of the abundance of grapes there met with. In the fifteenth century, the rediscovery of the continent was made by the Cabots,

Digitized by Google

enterprising merchants of Bristol, who visited the coast of Labrador in 1496, four years previous to which Columbus had discovered the Bahama islands. The thorough colonisation of the country was begun after this by the Spaniards, who were followed by the French and the English—the first colonisation by the English dating from the reign of Elizabeth, when Virginia was discovered by Raleigh, and settled upon.

The wrongs that the primitive possessors of America suffered at the hands of the colonists have never been fully made known. Our knowledge of those races is, in fact, altogether very meagre; and extraneous inquiries about their origin, &c., have thrown a veil, as it were, over the history of their sufferings. We do not understand the theory of migrations; and, as the American Indians do not much resemble any of the races of the Old World, we are content to believe that they were not descended from Noah and his descendants, that their origin was spontaneous, and that this was the case almost all over the world—every nation being, as a rule, the product of its own land at the outset. The name of Indians was given to the American aborigines by the Europeans who settled in their country, who supposed the tracts they colonised to be on the way to India; for which reason also the first discovered portion of America was called the West Indies. The treatment which the natives received from the colonists was almost uniformly extremely cruel and unjust. The greatest portion of the lands taken from them were taken by violence; setting fire to their dwellings was a constant process for compelling their flight; and those that did not run away were disposed of by the sword. Even the

Digitized by Google

companions of Penn did not hesitate to follow this well-approved course.

The history of the first days of the colony at Virginia is relieved by the poetical tale of Pocohontas, the daughter of Powhatan, an Indian chief of that locality. Pocohontas saved the life of an Englishman who had been captured by the chiefs of her race, was herself captured by an unprincipled adventurer, and at last found a deliverer in another Englishman, who converted her to Christianity, and married her. The childlike goodness and innocence of her character have been praised as much as her loveliness. Was she the only one of her race so endowed? And yet the Indians have been extirpated, when, like this woman, they might have been rescued and civilised. The result of the marriage, we read, was peace with the Indians, which, at the commencement of the settlement, was of course much prized. But this feeling did not last long; the English despised the Indians as savages, and were not assiduous for unions with them; by degrees animosities came to be fully developed on both sides: and this was uniformly the aspect of affairs in every place.

The colonisation of Virginia was followed by that of Maryland, Massachusetts, New Plymouth, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, and Connecticut, which were known collectively by the name of the New England States. They were recruited, on the one hand, by convicts, and, on the other by those who fled from the persecution of bigotry in England. These latter, known as the Pilgrim Fathers, were the bone and sinews of the settlements formed. It was their vigour that strengthened and supported all the colonies. At first their one dominant wish

Digitized by Google

was to Christianise the natives; but this humane feeling soon gave way to a so-called *bonâ fide* conviction that the Indians were naturally, as well as figuratively, the children of the devil; and they accordingly treated them as such—not only with contempt and abhorrence, but also with undisguised severity.

The Pilgrim Fathers first landed in America on the forbidding shores of Cape Cod, in the winter of 1620; and their first act was the drawing up of a voluntary compact of government. They received no power of government from the Crown, but continued to exercise every authority till they were incorporated with the province of Massachusetts in 1691. Bancroft says that they were the knights of their age; but this is not wholly true. Of most of them it has been correctly asserted that they were merely the Jesuits of England, and nothing more. Similarly, the settlers in Virginia are erroneously understood as having been of the best blood of England. What is true is that the cavaliers who migrated thither were the younger sons of families whose wants exceeded their means; while the bulk of the immigrants was formed of convicts, who preferred crossing the Atlantic to being strung up at home. Distinguishing the distribution according to the religious beliefs of the immigrants, it may be generally laid down that Virginia was colonised by the Roman Catholics, the New England States by the Puritans, and Pennsylvania by the Quakers.

Simultaneously with the English colonies referred to were developed the French colonies in Canada, which, as we have mentioned in the preceding chapter, were taken by England in 1759. This, which secured to England the empire she now holds in

Digitized by Google

America, was also, in a great measure, instrumental to the loss of the United States. At the close of the war with France, England found herself burthened with a large debt, which rendered it necessary for her to raise money by colonial taxation, on the pretext that the maintenance of her armies was necessitated by the requirements of her colonies. There had been bickerings before this time between the mother country and her bantlings in respect to the right of the former to interfere with the government of the latter, and to regulate their commerce; but heretofore the proximity of the French in Canada had kept the discontented in wholesome fear of, and in dependence on, the parent state. This fear was now removed, and the mine being ready for explosion, the spark was not late in coming to set it on flame. A new impost having been proposed in the form of a stamp-tax, the colonies denied the right of Parliament to impose duties and taxes on a people who were not represented in it. There is no doubt that they had a right to say so. They had planted themselves on a foreign soil to avoid oppression in the mother country; they had grown up almost in perfect neglect and without any thought of them on her part; in the hour of trouble they had assisted her in her wars with France, so far as the acquisition of Canada was concerned. They had just cause, therefore, to feel aggrieved when threatened with burthensome taxes to be imposed at the imperial will.

Their grievances now took a tangible form. Ten of the colonies joined in a congress, which met at New York on the 7th October 1765, and drew up a declaration of rights and grievances, in which all the privileges of Englishmen were claimed by them as their birthright, one of the most important of which

Digitized by Google

was exemption from taxation unless imposed by themselves. This had the desired effect: the Stamp Act was repealed. But, to vindicate its honour and importance, the Parliament simultaneously passed a "Declaratory Act," avowing the principle that Parliament had a right to bind the colonies in every respect. The whole virtue of the concession was thus nullified. The Act for taxing tea, glass, paper, &c., imported from the colonies, which followed soon after, reopened the question in all its bearings; the attempt made to enforce it was resisted; affrays between the citizens and soldiers exasperated opposition; and at last the disputes matured into a revolt. The declaration of independence was signed on the 4th July 1776, by the thirteen States of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia. It soon received the support of foreign powers, particularly of France smarting under the loss of her American possessions. At the eleventh hour England expressed her willingness to make all the concessions asked for by her colonies, except the acknowledgment of their independence; but the recusant States were now conscious of their strength, and refused to treat unless their independence were recognised. The English Government is said to have descended even to the offering of bribes in their endeavours to get back their dependencies. To one general in the American army, named Reed, a bribe of £10,000 and a fat appointment in H.M.'s service were offered. "I am not worth bribery," said the General proudly, in reply; "but such as I am, the King of Great Britain is not rich enough to buy me."

Digitized by Google

The struggle that followed was obstinate. The English had to carry on war at the same time with America, France, and Spain; besides which, all the northern powers of Europe formed themselves into an armed neutrality, prepared to strike in against them the moment they were weakened enough for the blow. The hands of England were also full of wars in India; and the general opinion of the world was so adverse to her cause, that the republican ranks were filled by volunteer recruits from all countries, not excepting herself. Notwithstanding all these disadvantages, the first battles between the disciplined forces of England and the raw levies of America were almost invariably decided in favour of the former; and the English generals had already begun to write home that the subjugation of the colonists was all but completed, when the tide veered against them, as they ought to have anticipated from the outset that it would, considering that one party was fighting for their rights, and the other for continuing a forced control over a population already three millions strong. A contest morally so unequal could possibly have had no other termination than that which was secured by the surrender of Lord Cornwallis to General Washington on the 19th October 1781.

The independence of the United States was a relief to Great Britain. The colonies had long become a source of expense and internal involvement to her, and the distractions of a distant and divided political administration had become irritating. The question of right in the quarrel of course lay on the side of the Americans; but England's wish to coerce them was at the same time very natural. The struggle was obstinate and prolonged, but eventually the

Digitized by Google

Americans won, mainly through the bravery of their German mercenaries and the devotedness of the French, and not solely, as they are now so anxious to make out, by their own exertions.

The independence of America was formally recognised in 1783, and the formation of the federal constitution completed in 1787. Of the original States ten out of thirteen possessed, down to the time of the revolution, forms of government resembling that of the mother country, the Governor representing the royal power, a Legislative Council the Upper House of Parliament, and a General Assembly of Representatives the Lower House. The remaining three States—namely, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and Rhode Island—were, from their first organisation, democratic in temporal affairs, and in spiritual matters recognised liberty of conscience and freedom of worship as among their fundamental laws; and it was on the principle of this minority that the federal constitution was based. The first union of ten States was called the Revolutionary Government. The next union of thirteen States formed the Government of Confederation, which undertook and finished the war, and signed the treaty by which their independence was acknowledged. But it was not able to do anything more; it could not pay its debts, or even its current expenses. To form a permanent union, and accommodate the opinions and wishes of the delegates of the several States essentially differing in several respects, required further deliberation and patient management, and was finally accomplished by the convention of 1787, by which the constitution was thoroughly reorganised, and the interests of the different States merged in those of the nation, Washington being elected President of the Republic.

Digitized by Google

Thus did the Americans make themselves a new nation in the new world. Sprung from the English stock, they soon drew to themselves emigrants from almost all parts of Europe, notably from Germany, Ireland, Norway, Sweden, and France. The native-born Americans partake largely of the English character, and are intelligent and active, though not to the same extent as Englishmen; but they rarely possess in fulness the corporeal stamina of their ancestry. The rest of the population, particularly of the Northern States, is considerably inferior in all respects, and altogether very heterogeneous; and virtually the Americans are at present only an aggregation of races, and not a distinct nation by themselves. They have not had time, in fact, to coalesce and grow together into one nation; they have not even acquired a proper name for themselves. The designation Yankee, the Indian corruption of English, has long ceased to be applicable to them, as they have disacknowledged England; and the name American is much too wide and indefinite to suit them well. They have nevertheless fully vindicated the revolution by which they became independent. They have not only shown themselves to be quite competent to take care of themselves, but have, in the midst of the passions and dangers of democracy, and, for a long time, with the stain of slavery fastened on them, become a great power, with all the prognostics of a gigantic destiny. There is now no doubt of their daily growth to greatness, and of their being destined to great things, provided they remain faithful to themselves. But they spoil their own good name by a very large amount of unnecessary gasconade.

The peace concluded between Great Britain and

Digitized by Google

the United States after the Revolutionary war remained undisturbed till 1812. Intermediately, several questions arose between them in respect to which they reproached each other. The English right of search gave particular offence, and the Americans were again the first to declare war, which they did with their usual foresight, while the mother country had her hands full of differences with Canada in America, and with Napoleon I. in Europe. But the contest now was not in the cause of liberty, but arising only from a spirit of rivalry and defiance; and, the premises being different, the results also were dissimilar, as compared with those of the first war. On the ocean the fortune of the combatants was nearly equal; while on land the Americans invading Canada were repulsed, but successfully repelled in their turn the aggression that was made on their territory, though not till Washington was captured, after which peace was concluded in 1815, upon England agreeing to surrender the right of search.

A long era of tranquillity succeeded, which enabled America to make rapid strides at improvement. The greatest activity was displayed in the opening out of roads and canals to connect the Western States, the great lakes, and the extensive valley of the interior with the Atlantic seaboard; the agricultural and mineral resources of the country were developed with persistent energy; very considerable improvement was made in manufactures and mechanical appliances; commerce was so widely extended that, almost like England's, the flag of the United States is to be seen flying in every part of the world; a mercantile marine was created which at this moment counts 36,000 vessels, including lake and river craft; while the progress in population and

Digitized by Google

wealth was equally great, the first having increased from four millions at the time of the Revolution to thirty-six millions—of course principally by immigration.

The great mania of the Americans yet is for increase of territory. They have already secured large possessions, both by purchase and compulsory occupation. Texas was annexed on the merest pretext, which led to a war with Mexico, and, as Mexico was unable to fight with them on equal terms, the final result of the disagreement was the further annexation of the provinces of New Mexico, Utah, and California. But even this was not all. Advancing into the wilderness, the Americans have everywhere displaced the poor Indians, whose hunting-grounds have been usurped and subjected to the operations of the plough, and who have been branded as pests and savages for resisting the march of American progress. In this the Yankees have exhibited their resolution and unscrupulousness to the greatest advantage, without betraying any inordinate share either of conscience or sensibility. Of course the country thus assumed has been, or is being, covered with flourishing settlements and substantial farms, with all the indications of comfort and prosperity. An industrial population now covers long areas where there were no inhabitants before; but it is not to be forgotten that patent rights have usurped the place of moral rights, which have been unmercifully ignored. To the thirteen States owned before have been added eighteen others—namely, Maine, Vermont, Ohio, Michigan, Kentucky, Tennessee, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa, Wisconsin, Missouri, Arkansas, Mississippi, Alabama, Florida, Louisiana, Texas, and California. Besides these, additional

Digitized by Google

territories, known as Oregon, Minnesota, Utah, New Mexico, Nebraska, &c., have been acquired; and thus the territory of the Union has come to be extended from sea to sea. The Yankees, nevertheless, still hanker for further extension to the north and south; for Canada on one side, and Cuba and Mexico on the other. The States acquired are already filling up with white settlers and their comfortable dwelling-houses and well-tilled fields; but the question still arises,—Where are their old occupants gone? "Las Casas, help me to believe in God!" was the exclamation of the benevolent Spaniard, when he witnessed the outrages perpetrated by his countrymen on the red men of Peru. Has not that belief vindicated itself? What is Spain now? What her position in the scale of nations? Where is she hastening to? Is that not a lesson deserving to be read by the most go-ahead nation of the modern world? Great has been the expansion of the United States; marvellous the history of her prosperity. But the fall may yet be as signal as that of Spain. At every place the Indians have been basely treated, defrauded of their possessions, tricked in every bargain, and remorselessly hunted from place to place; and all this has been done so calmly and plausibly, that *primâ facie* there is no evidence of much injustice having been done to them. It is even pretended that civilisation was offered to the Indians and refused; offered at the butt-end of guns and in brandy-flasks. Did they misread such civilisation when they rejected it as synonymous to perjury, violence, robbery, and murder? There are still about four hundred thousand Indians in the territory of the United States—one-half of whom are hostile to the States; and it is not

Digitized by Google

long since that the President in one of his messages said that he would hunt them to death. It is hard that the original children of the soil should thus be exterminated by those who have forcibly assumed what belonged to them; but civilisation—American civilisation at least—will not tread with barbarism on neutral ground.

The other great curse of America was slavery, which has only recently been abolished. At England's door lies the original guilt of having introduced it in the North American States, it having been introduced by them into Virginia in 1620, or simultaneously with the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers on another spot. But nobly did England afterwards expiate her guilt; while America dared not for a long time look the evil in the face, and, even so late as 1838, passed a rule in Congress that no petitions for abolition were to be read. The impression in the United States for a long time was that they could not do without slaves—even Washington and Franklin were slaveholders; and nothing but a civil war would have destroyed the anomaly of a people professing to be free in the extremest sense of the word, still struggling actively against the emancipation of the slave.

The civil war came. For a long time the increase of the Republican party in the Northern States had been regarded with fear by the Southern States. The success of the former at this stage, in the election of a President of republican proclivities, who was particularly disliked by the South, completed the alarm. All hopes of an honourable adjustment of differences were now believed to be extinguished; and the Southern States at once made up their minds to secede; and on the 19th December 1860, South

Digitized by Google

Carolina, taking the lead, proclaimed her secession—Florida, Mississippi, Alabama, and Georgia following suit in January 1861, when the Confederate flag was raised. This act was not unconstitutional, but the Northern States refused to allow it. The war was not waged by the North in any degree in the interest of the slaves; the northern people despised the negroes; they were better prized, at least as chattels, by the people of the South. The war was waged solely for the preservation of the Union, for the maintenance of the integrity of the empire. If it had been possible to obtain this object without enfranchising the slave, the rule of bondage would have continued to be maintained. The Northern States were sixteen in number, the Southern fifteen; the area of the former in square miles was 612,700—of the latter, 914,500; but, while the population of the Northern States was above twenty millions, that of the latter was only about twelve millions—including negroes; and among this small population the Northerners endeavoured to create a division by declaring the negroes free.

At the commencement both parties were without standing armies, except a few regiments kept for watching over the Indians. But the Federal States, being much more populous than the Southern States, were able from the commencement to throw out against the latter a continuous human tide, which the South had but slender means to resist. The North had also great advantages in equipment, manufactories, and railway communications; and, from its naval superiority, its commerce remained unharassed except by occasional privateers, while the trade of the South was ruined, its coasts invaded, and its rivers converted into thoroughfares. Against all these

Digitized by Google

odds the Southern States had to contend, and did contend most manfully. They fought against armies twice as numerous as their own, while their ports were strictly blockaded, which deprived them of supplies. If England and France had aided the Southerners, as was suggested by Napoleon III., it would have been all over with the Union. But the forbearance of England was not appreciated. The Yankees had come to suspect that it was she that had stirred up the Southern States to revolt, and not all the Alabama damages which have since been paid by her have yet satisfied them. One thing is certain, that the weakness of America has now been discovered. The vitality of the South has been established; the discontent in it, it is known, is only stifled, not put out; and the probabilities are extremely great that sooner or later the civil war will of itself be renewed, perhaps with greater asperity than before; a crisis which may be accelerated at any time by the assistance of other nations, if they choose to interfere. The division of North and South existed from the days of Penn, when the Puritans of Pennsylvania quarrelled with the Roman Catholics of Maryland, and Lord Baltimore settled their conflicting claims by a boundary line which was virtually the same, so far as it went, as that which recently separated the Federals and the Confederates. A little encouragement to the Southerners can make this division more indented and permanent.

The subjection of the South emancipated the slaves. The Southerners, of course, have not received this result as a blessing. Heretofore the slave population in the south, though not so numerous as the white population, was sufficient to

Digitized by Google

relieve the latter of every kind of drudgery, and converted them virtually into a sort of aristocracy, at least so far as leisure, wealth, and distinction could do so. This position has now been altered. The freedom obtained by the slaves is being properly asserted. The women of the negroes have, for the most part, already ceased to work on the plantations. They are now generally usefully employed in school-teaching, shopkeeping, needlework, &c.; and, as the wants of the race are very moderate, a little amount of labour is sufficient to raise the money absolutely required for their support. Labour, which the whites in the south were habituated to regard as a disgrace, they are now obliged to share in; and as a large part of plantation-work can be done by low-class labourers only, the need of attracting such immigrants has become great, and many inducements have necessarily been offered to them. But besides this no other difficulty has arisen. Before the emancipation, one party prophesied that the slaves on being set free would die out or be exterminated, neither of which alternatives has been verified. Another party predicted with equal confidence that the black population would in that case supplant the white; but this also has not come to pass. Occasional differences at particular places have arisen between the two races, and will arise, from time to time; but they have nowhere assumed the character of a state difficulty of any real importance.

The present position of the United States is undoubtedly prosperous; but this prosperity is attributable only to their unlimited resources, and to the peculiarity of their position. The condition of the States is not analogous to that of any country

Digitized by Google

in Europe. They have all the advantages without any of the disadvantages of the Old World. They are not straitened for room, nor exhausted of means; they have no neighbours to distrust, and consequently no armies to maintain; they are daily receiving all the redundant energies of the Old World, and are not overstocked with drones. Their only great competitor in similarity of position is Australasia, the soil of which is capable of supporting immigrants even better than that of the American States, and to which the tide of emigration has in consequence been increasing. But America has the advantage of being more easily reached, and at an expense which is within the means of almost all classes; and the sources of employment in it are also more varied and abundant than at the antipodes. These, however, are the only advantages on the American side; America derives none especially from her constitution, which has been so much boasted of.

The only two systems of free government now in existence are the English and the American, the latter of which was, as we have seen, established in direct antagonism to the former; and professed to be an improvement of it. The American Congress or Parliament consists of a Senate and a House of Representatives, with a President, who combines in himself the functions of king and prime minister as existing in Great Britain. The Senate is composed of members chosen for six years, the House of Representatives of members chosen for two years; the former being selected by the different States represented, the latter by the people. Apparently these arrangements would seem to be not unlike those in force in Great Britain; but the actual difference between the

Digitized by Google

two systems is very great. In the United States the frequency of elections, the great diffusion of the franchise, and the allowances granted to the members of both Houses, cause a class of men to be elected the majority of whom have no independent means consistent with their position; whereas the British House of Lords consists of members of great independence and honesty—and even the House of Commons is replenished by men of competence, who are sufficiently independent to preserve a high tone of feeling and principle. The ultra-democratic idea that all men are born free and equal may read well on paper, but is simply absurd. All men are not born free, but under certain limitations, which exist in every government; nor are all men born equal, either in natural gifts or abilities, or in social position. It is a truism to assert that all men are equal in the eye of the law, which very truism owes its origin to the fact that all men are not *born* equal. Some distinction in selection is, under these circumstances, absolutely necessary; and the absence of it in America has not been particularly beneficial to her. The British Legislature is the most respectable association in the world; the American Legislature is an association of rowdies.

According to Thiers, the American Republic is an "experiment." It has been more properly named by others an "accident." "Honour," says Montesquieu, "is the basis of monarchy, and virtue the basis of a republic;" but the best existing model of a republic has not a very large share of either one or the other, the government being in the hands of a majority represented alike by dishonesty, vice, and stupidity. No better men could have anywhere been found than those who signed the declaration of independence

Digitized by Google

less than a century ago. No worse men can be pointed out in any country than those who regulate the destinies of the United States in our day. The deterioration is remarkable; the corruption general. The officials commit every misdemeanour short of stealing, because their salaries do not maintain them; the entire administration is in the hands of political adventurers, paupers, and criminals. This does not augur well for the permanency of the constitution; still less does it encourage imitation. The Americans are very anxious to see democracy established in Europe. The only way to secure that end is to purify their own institution—to make it worthy of adoption.

The crudities of the constitution are also remarkable. The theory of the Union is that the Congress at Washington is only a congress or council of States for the management of their foreign or interstate affairs, each State retaining its full sovereign authority in domestic matters. It is not a distinct establishment from the States, with separate interests and divided objects. It is merely an instrument for executing the will of the country at large, its functions being performed by men bound by local interests to particular States. This is at best an exceedingly cumbrous arrangement. It is well adapted to the present wants of the United States, but would be totally unsuited to the wants of the more polished and civilised people of Great Britain and France. Even in America it is doubtful if it will suit a more thickly-populated territory; and people who talk of introducing it in England talk very heedlessly indeed. The permanence of the institution even in America is doubtful. It has been hitherto sustained only by the geographical position

Digitized by Google

of the States, their immense extent of territory, which is only sparsely populated, and the pride of that independence which was fought for and won, which has induced the people to adhere to the institutions they started with. The country in its present state has been correctly called the paradise of mediocrity, and its institutions are suited to that state only. When the limits of mediocrity are passed, the institutions will have to be recast or purified.

As regards the forms of administration, the difference between the British and American systems is not very great, for the simplest of all reasons, that almost all the American forms of any value have been borrowed from Britain. Trial by jury, the law regarding Habeas Corpus, inviolability of domicile, the independence of courts, the subjection of every act of the executive to the ordinary operations and restrictions of the law, the distribution of power among the local and popular bodies,—all these are British institutions and privileges, which the Americans have adopted at second hand. With these for foundation-stones they have attempted to set up a more ostentatious superstructure than the British constitution; but the structure thus raised is not likely to bear the wear and tear of everyday use so well. All the good of the American system is confined to what they have borrowed from the mother country. They abuse the mother country in unmeasured terms, are always ready to keep up a quarrel with her, threaten her at least twenty-three hours out of every twenty-four; but they carefully copy all her time-honoured institutions, just as much as they imitate her in every branch of manufacture and industry. "You are good for nothing, old

Digitized by Google

hunks; and I shall kick you out of eternity. But I like this and that which you have got, and which no one else can boast of, and I shall certainly appropriate them." Nor could America do anything better than copy Old England in all her ways. If she did so carefully, she would soon be able to correct her innumerable deficiences.

In the matter of civilisation, America is particularly deficient, and assuredly very far behind England. It is unfortunate that all comparisons of America should be with England, to which the United States are inferior in almost every respect. The contrast would not be so strong if the States were juxtaposed with most of the other European countries. Golovin, a Russian by birth, though afterwards naturalised in England, may well be accepted as an unprejudiced witness on behalf of America. "An American," he says, "is an intoxicated Britisher who keeps his feet in the air, speaks through his nose, and spits over people's heads; who aims at money-making, little caring for such a trifle as respectability." "I do admire," he continues, "the Pilgrim Fathers in search of a remote spot for the exercise of their faith; I admire their children fighting for their independence; but I declare that their descendants are making bad use of their freedom." This, even to the present day, will be the opinion of every independent observer. Where Presidents are insulted or beaten, there can be no real respectability. It is true that attempts against the sovereign's life are not uncommon in other countries also; but we do not refer at present to assassinations and treasons. In other countries sovereigns reign by monopoly, and may and will have enemies in men prompted by fanati-

Digitized by Google

cism, madness, or despair. The President of the United States is, on the contrary, chosen by the nation he represents, and ought to reign in their hearts and affections. Yet even this officer, so especially selected, sits not only in constant dread of the bowie-knife and the revolver—a common fear of all potentates — but also of the whip and the cane!

Again, Golovin remarks that in America "one must be anvil or hammer, dupe or swindler, more than anywhere else. One-half of the people cheats," their victims being those who come from other parts of the world. "Out of *three* Yankees there are *four* swindlers!" "Swindlers in the North, slaveholders in the South, and border ruffians in the West, constitute the white population of the 'glorious and great country' which boasts to be the leader of mankind." It is certain that America is not a better edition of England, as the Americans would have it. She may be called a more enlarged edition, so far as extent of territory is concerned, but she is in all other respects an exceedingly vitiated edition. The Anglo-Saxon evidently deteriorates with transplantation. He has at least done so in America and in India, and, to some extent, in Australasia also. Possibly unlimited licence calls out his worst passions into play, passions which cannot develop to the same extent in the mother country.

Swindling in America is swindling *par excellence;* but it is not swindling only that we have to notice. New York has been called the Sodom of modern times; in it adultery and abortions form the fundamental items of news and talk among all classes. Golovin says of persons of the middle class all over the United States, that "four or five of them com-

Digitized by Google

bine to keep a woman in common, and know the hours when they ought not to knock at her door;" and again, that "they keep women in public houses, quite as one would keep a horse at the livery stables." Who shall affirm that the state of things has become better since? The keepers of bad houses have repeatedly declared before their own courts that their best customers are married people of both sexes; and there is no doubt that the street females of the United States are more immodest even than those of London and Berlin. Mormonism was only an improvement over this state of society; nor could it have taken root anywhere except in America.

The other patent defects of the Americans are the absence of refined manners, the absence of gratitude, and the total negation of heart, feeling, and benevolence. The first—the want of refined manners—has been attributed to the want of a Court. There are handsome houses, fine furniture, expensive clothing, but all devoid of that taste and refinement which confer elegance on them in the Old World. Cooper vindicates his country on this head by urging that, if there be less refined manners in it than elsewhere, there is also less of rusticity, the extremes of society in it not being so much separated as in other countries. This vindication is not worth much. It admits the main charge, that a very high elevation of manners has not been attained. Of the absence of gratitude, the best evidence, perhaps, is in the conduct of America towards England. It is worthy of remark, also, that the debt of America to France was never repaid, on the mere pretext that Louis XVI. fought, not for the American republic, but for the humiliation of England. "Look not the gift horse in the

Digitized by Google

mouth, but thank the giver of it," is not a principle either acknowledged or appreciated by the Americans; and yet the gift horse, in this instance at least, was a good horse in the shape of a fleet and army and considerable sums of money, without which it is doubtful if the cause of independence would have been so easily won. As for heart or benevolence, nothing more cold and callous than their treatment of the slave question, nothing more heartless and fiendish than their treatment of the Indians, can be conceived.

Nor has democracy developed the intellect of the nation fully. With a large development of revenue, population, agriculture, shipbuilding, &c., there has also been an extensive cultivation of literature, the sciences, and the arts, but no great superiority of standard in either has yet been attained. The best literature of America is only equal to the second and third class literature of England. The Irvings, Prescotts, Bancrofts, Coopers, and Longfellows do not rise higher than the ordinary run of authors in Europe. The number of newspapers published is very great, considerably in excess of the number published in England; but the trash they disseminate is for the most part not only inane, but abominable, and would not find admittance in journals of the lowest class in London. One reason of the number being so great is that the States are distinct, and, journalism being rampant everywhere, every State requires distinct vehicles of its own. The demand for circulating libraries is very inconsiderable, a clear proof that useful reading is not yet much appreciated. In England the people are afraid of one thing—public opinion; but the Americans are indifferent to it, and their public opinion is so low

Digitized by Google

that they could not be otherwise. The best check against national debasement does not therefore exist among them.

For all these reasons, an individual Yankee has not yet become a very elevated specimen of the human race; but congregating in numbers, the Yankees form an element of great strength. They congregate and combine on every occasion, and for every purpose; and this combination has made them the most enterprising people in the world. Hence their strength for great undertakings, hence their stupendous railroads and canals, and their vast clearances of wildernesses. For everyday improvement in private life they have no genius; self-reliance as an individual virtue is not very prominent among them. But, as a nation, they are very pushing and very independent. For all that, however, the leading characteristic of the people is caution, and utility the standard by which everything is weighed. They have not much originality of conception, but are very clear-sighted and practical, and are always active in improving what others originate. Great ingenuity has, however, been displayed by them in all mechanical arts, though the finish of the English producer has not yet been attained.

As a young nation, America is sensitive to criticism; but we have not read the American character simply to find fault with it. It has many redeeming traits. In America, more than anywhere else, a man is the founder of his own fortune. It is no bar to a man's preferment that his parentage is unworthy. A disreputable father does not disgrace a worthy son. Rank there is none, beyond that accorded to the temporary possession of some elective post, which does not confer particular respect or regard. The

Digitized by Google

wealthy merchant, the successful manufacturer, are regarded as nature's aristocrats, and well prized. In America also, more than anywhere else, service does not demean. There are *helps*, not servants, which is certainly less degrading to human nature than the servile relations as they exist in other countries. For this reason, also, the servant classes are of higher status, and even respectable people will take service.

The natural associations of the people are English. The recollections of their descent, their connection with British literature, their extensive commercial relations with England and the English dependencies, are calculated to make them English. But this tendency is repelled by an unnatural effort, the stereotyped plea for which is that torrents of blood have been shed between Great Britain and the United States, and the injuries inflicted by the mother country do not admit of being forgotten or condoned. But this surely is a most absurd plea. The right assumed by the mother country which led to the Revolution was certainly more than an injustice — for it was a mistake. But having led to resistance and final success on the part of the Americans, they, to say the least of it, have nothing more to resent. The real cause of American ill-will is their deep-seated envy of the greatness of England, which eclipses the greatness that they have yet been able to attain. A candid acknowledgment of this feeling would cover them with shame; and so they mouth, and gibe, and gesticulate, and make show that they do not care a bit for England's pretensions, and are only anxious to make her smart for the wrongs she has done them. But by all these bilious exhibitions they only de-

Digitized by Google

mean themselves, for the imposture is easily read. During the Crimean war the Russian army was stocked with Americans serving as surgeons and in other capacities, and yet what a fuss was made about an attempt on the part of some British agents to recruit in the United States! Who believed in the honesty of the complaint that was made? To the envy of the American people at large is to be added the hatred of the Irish section of it against England, which accounts for the eager desire expressed by all, in season and out of season, to get up a war between the two countries. It is not, as some explain, a mere party cry. The wish to exchange blows does really exist. But with the wish there also exists the conviction that nothing would be gained by such a contest—not even the coveted possession of Canada; and that the loss on the American side would be at least as heavy as anything the Americans could inflict on England.

Brag apart, how does the question really stand? Are the Americans prepared to fight with England, or with any great European power? They have not soldiers enough to man their fortresses, nor navy sufficient to protect their own ports; and, with the South in chronic disaffection, it would seem that a few vessels like the Alabama would suffice to dissolve the Union for good. Are the Americans particularly anxious to hasten the crisis? The fact is, their long prosperity and immunity from great wars has blinded them; they require some disappointments and defeats to cure them of their overweening presumption.

The missions of England and America are very distinct. The geographical position of the former is circumscribed, but she has adopted as her mis-

Digitized by Google

sion the exploration and peopling of the distant wildernesses of the earth. America has no similar call; her wildernesses at home are large enough to engross all her energies. To clear her forests, till her soil, and utilise all her resources without looking beyond her ocean limits, except for commercial purposes, is her destiny. No two countries could have objects so dissimilar; there is no reason, therefore, why they should quarrel. That they emulate each other in commerce can be no reason for their being at loggerheads for ever.

It is scarcely likely, however, that the Americans will get cured of their distemper soon. Not all the unconcern of England, not all her politeness, not all her attempts to please, have smoothed the ruffled temper across the Atlantic. The Alabama concessions of England had no object but to mollify the irritation of her largest customer; the nation of shopkeepers was not afraid of the bravado, but solicitous to preserve the custom of her buyers beyond the ocean: but even those concessions have not elicited a single response of kindliness. It seems unnecessary, therefore, that England should trouble herself further on the subject; and it certainly is time that the use of such terms as "Brother Jonathan" and "Uncle Sam" should be discontinued. The feeling implied is not reciprocated, and it is humiliating that England on her part should still be at pains to avow it. Money being well appreciated on both sides, to pounds sterling and dollars should be left the preservation of peace between the two countries, so long as it may be possible to preserve it. Sufferance and soft words are simply thrown away.

If she be true to her destiny, America ought,

Digitized by Google

sooner or later, to be able, from her natural resources, to outrun England in all agricultural, manufacturing, and commercial enterprises; but this, allowing a longer interval, is equally true of Canada and Australasia. In all three cases such development is merely a work of time. That America precedes the other two in the race is only because she had the earlier start; but the prospect in her case is scarcely as clear as in that of the other two. Her present prosperity is undoubtedly great; but we must not allow it to hoodwink us. She has pushed on her population into the wilderness, opened new channels and created fresh markets for her traffic, called forth heaps and heaps of new cities into existence. But there is a bee in her bonnet already; it is very doubtful if, constituted as the United States are, they can long be true to themselves. The history of the world, as we read it, seems to indicate most plainly that the distinctions "Federals" and "Confederates" will not die out, and that as much blood will be drawn out of both as was shed in the olden times between England and France, and between France and Germany. The continuous development of the greatness of the country will depend on the fulfilment or otherwise of this prophecy. We make a present of it to the Yankees, whether they receive it kindly from us or not.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

FRANCE, OR THE *GRANDE NATION.*

THE history of the *Grande Nation* is one of the most remarkable chapters in the annals of the world. With a civilisation in advance of all other countries, with an intelligence second to none, with aspirations for liberty which have nowhere been equalled, France, throughout the entire period of her existence, has hunted only after shadows—after grandeur, glory, and renown—without ever being able to secure more than a moderate share of political independence and social happiness. Naturally the country has a compact appearance, and the people inhabiting it have always been sympathetic, powerful, and homogeneous, apparently intended by Providence to wield a sovereign influence in the world. But the vanity, fickleness, and impatience of the nation have uniformly perverted the tendency of that intent, not only to the detriment of France herself, but also to the detriment of all her neighbours. The political life of France has consisted merely of a succession of spasmodic efforts to grasp at that which cannot be secured except by patient and persistent exertion; and her social condition has been that of a fire-raiser enjoying the mischief created by

Digitized by Google

himself. A country which gave birth to Montesquieu and Fenelon, to Pascal and Des Cartes, cannot be said to be unable to produce solidity of thought and maturity of judgment; but it is nevertheless true that the nation at large has invariably betrayed a total want of capacity to understand anything that is not absolutely superficial, and has never yet been able to manage with practical intelligence any really efficient government that aimed to secure both liberty and happiness. Theoretically, no one appreciates liberty better than the Frenchman; practically, no one in Europe has been a greater slave.

Of the very old history of France we know nothing. The same tradition that makes Britain a settlement of the Trojans, speaks of Greek settlements on the Mediterranean coast, near the mouth of the Rhone, of which the chief was Massilia, now called Marseilles. But our historic knowledge of the country does not go beyond the age when it was occupied by different Celtic tribes, among whom the Gauls were the most prominent, being particularly known for the many inroads they made into Italy, in the northern parts of which they eventually settled under the name of Cisalpine Gauls. This led to the resolution of the Romans to beat back the barbarians and subjugate their country, which was achieved by Julius Cæsar in the manner narrated in his Commentaries, and which forms the first great fact in the history of France.

The Romans ruled over Gaul for four hundred and fifty years, during which they effected considerable improvement by their tutelage, at the same time that they enervated the character of the people by their refinements. It followed, therefore, that

Digitized by Google

when the conquerors were obliged to retire from their dependencies to defend their own country, the Gauls were unable to offer any effectual opposition to the German nations that assailed them—namely, the Visigoths, the Burgundians, and the Franks, after the last of whom France was called.

The settlement of Franks or Freemen in France was effected in the fifth century, and forms the second important fact in French history. The first king of the tribe in France was Clovis, who was converted to Christianity by his wife Clotilda, a princess of Burgundy. Clovis ruled also over Franconia, the possession of the nation in Germany, so that the rulers of France from the commencement of her history did not reign over France alone, a circumstance which led to much confusion and fighting in subsequent years. The policy of Clovis permitted the Franks to intermix freely with the Gauls; he also allowed them to intermix freely with the Britons, when, flying from England before the Saxons, they settled on French land in the province called after them Brittany or Bretagne; and it was by these means that the Celtic element was made to predominate in the people of France.

From the accession of Clovis to the extinction of the Carlovingian race, the history of France consists only of a series of petty wars and uninteresting events. The feudal system was introduced into France with the Merovingian rule. The lands wrested from the Gauls were equally divided between the conquerors, probably in the same manner as the spoil and personal effects. In the assertion of this right no special deference was paid to the chief by his followers. It is said of Clovis that a vase of extraordinary beauty having been carried

Digitized by Google

off from a church in Rheims, which the bishop of that city wanted to get back, the king entreated his army to present it to him over and above his own share of the booty; upon which a fierce soldier rushing up smashed the vase with his battle-axe, saying, "You shall receive nothing here but that to which the lot gives you a right." The lands taken were divided among all the chief's followers on the principle of military service; but beyond that service they contributed nothing. The property acquired was considered to belong so absolutely to its owner, that even the sovereign power was equally divided between the sons of Clovis after him.

The dynasty of Clovis was succeeded by that of Charles Martel, or the Hammer, whose father, as Mayor of the Palace, had wielded the regal power during the obscure reigns of several Merovingian princes, whose characters have been fully described by the expressive epithet *lazy*, while all their names have not been rescued from oblivion. Arrangements of this sort are familiar to us with reference to our connection with India, where the Peishwas of Central India in the time of the Mahrattas actually ruled over the kings by whom they were employed; and such, virtually, is the existing arrangement in force in Nepal, where Jung Bahadoor is all in all, though nominally the king's prime minister only.

The powers assumed by Martel were well deserved. In the growth of a little more than a century, the religion of Mahomet had pierced into Europe and subjugated Spain; and, becoming bolder by success, had now crossed the Pyrenees, and was marching rampant over France. To France and Martel belongs the honour of having rolled back the

Digitized by Google

tide. The Saracens found themselves for the first time oppressed by the robust stature and reckless courage of the warriors who opposed them; the weighty strokes of the "Hammer" forced them to fall back; and thus was the further expansion of Islamism in Europe prevented. The Pope recognised with pleasure the service rendered to Christendom, and sent to the victor the keys of the tomb of St Peter, and proclaimed him Consul of Rome. But he died shortly after; and the clergy, who resented the freedom with which he had applied the revenues of the Church to the defence of the Christian religion, proclaimed, on the unimpeachable authority of a vision beheld by St Eucherius, Bishop of Orleans, that the body and soul of the defender of Christendom were burning in the abyss of hell! The words of St Eucherius are, that he saw "Charles Martel with Cain, Judas, and Caiaphas, thrust into the Stygian whirlpools and Acherontic combustion of the sempiternal Tartarus"!!

The first great aggrandisement of France was the result of the prowess of Charlemagne, the grandson of Charles Martel, who saved Christian Europe from subjugation, on the one side by the Moslems intrenched beyond the Pyrenees, and on the other by the pagan Saxons who ravaged eastern France from the Rhine to the Moselle. The Moslems were attacked by Charlemagne in Spain, and a part of that country occupied, which effectually checked their expansion; but this hostile demonstration did not prevent his illustrious contemporary, Kaliph Haroun-al-Raschid, the head of the Moslem race, from exchanging civilities with him by sending an ambassador to salute him. The Saxons were overpowered by him in their homes, and on one occasion he be-

Digitized by Google

headed as many as five thousand of them—a barbarity which was execrated even in that age, notwithstanding that it materially furthered the cause of Christian conversion. By these successes he was enabled to unite all the countries and races of the West; and for this service he was crowned Emperor of the West by the Pope—a distinction which proved very unfortunate in the sequel, as French kings were not wanting in later days to emulate the greatness and glory of Charlemagne, which kept the country always involved in wars with Germany and Italy. At the time of Charlemagne the constitution of France was a consultive monarchy, and the sovereign always ascertained the will of his subjects in all things that concerned them, particularly in respect to the wars intended to be waged. But the despots who subsequently emulated his achievements were not so particular. They plunged their people headlong in bootless struggles without consulting anything but their own pretensions and predilections, silencing the opposition of judgment and discretion by that magic word "glory," the witchery of which no Frenchman has yet been able to resist.

The mighty empire of Charlemagne was split up into distinct principalities under his descendants; and, correctly speaking, his grandson, Charles the Bald, was the first king of France. It was in the reign of this prince that the Norman invasions of France began to become troublesome; and by the time of Charles the Simple, the French found it convenient to compound with the invaders by giving up to them the province of Neustria (Normandy), Rollo, their chief, consenting on his part to be baptised, to marry a daughter of the king, to yield

Digitized by Google

homage for the lands he held, and to accept the distinction of being one of the twelve peers of France. This arrangement was so far beneficial to France that it infused new blood into the country, in which martial habits and virtues were already falling into decay. A fusion of races did not immediately take place, but the west of France became repeopled by a mixed and valiant race, well able to resist any aggression on the French empire, either from Germany or from any other direction. On the other hand, the murderous character of the Normans was improved; they adopted the religion, language, and usages of the French; and, already efficient as soldiers and sailors, they now sat down to acquire the skill and taste of artisans. It was these Normans and their children—not the French—who, within a hundred years after, crossed over and conquered England, just as they had acquired Normandy before, both Saxons and Franks being compelled alike to make room for them.

The universal weakness of the laws at this period gave rise to the birth of Chivalry. The chronicles of Robert the Devil, of Normandy, afterwards known as Robert the Magnificent, seem to indicate that Chivalry sprang with him, as it was his policy to espouse the cause of the weak. But it appears more probable that this distinguishing feature of knighthood originated with the preaching of the clergy, who first directed their efforts to the same end. Unable to accomplish their object by themselves, they adroitly made protection of the weak a virtue of the knight, and introduced vows and ceremonies to make the injunction impressive. Devotion to the fair was at the same time easily blended with a warrior's duty, being only a further extension

Digitized by Google

of the first principle; and this aided immensely in raising the character and position of the sex. In time other principles were added to the code, such as courteousness of manners, endurance of hardship, &c. &c.; and they were all promptly accepted, not only by the Franks and Normans, but throughout all Europe. To France belongs the high credit of having diffused this spirit widely; and it was she also that reaped the greatest benefit from it. The formation and perfection of the language of France is attributable to it; her intellect also received a great impulse from it, especially as respects the development of poetry; and the character of her people was at the same time refined. Nor did the refinements thus originated terminate with the institution by which they were called forth. The sentiments of Chivalry were imperceptibly adopted by the respectable classes in all countries, and even to this day illustrate the feelings of gentility and education.

This was also the age of the Crusades; and the exhortations of Peter the Hermit and the Pope were most promptly echoed back from France, whence the enthusiasm for war rapidly extended to other countries. To use the words of Anna Comnena—all Europe, torn from the foundation, seemed ready to precipitate itself in one united body on Asia. "God wills it," "It is indeed the will of God," were the shouts of myriads; and young and old, rich and poor, knight and plebeian, girded with equal earnestness for the fight. Seven crusades were organised. It does not matter that Palestine was not rescued; that the fightings carried on for nearly two hundred years were accompanied by a large amount of suffering, loss of life, and expendi-

Digitized by Google

ture; that they also cherished a fierce spirit of fanaticism and intolerance. The advantages derived from them were much greater. They brought men and races into intercourse with each other, broke down prejudices, gave birth to an enlarged system of commerce, suggested friendly combinations and political alliances, and contributed largely to the expansion both of civilisation and intellect. France also owed to the Crusades the acquisition of Normandy, Maine, and Anjou, which Philip Augustus, taking advantage of the rashness of Richard I., and the weakness of his successor, John, was able easily to resume from England.

The chivalrous feelings of the age greatly contributed to produce the Crusades; and the Crusades, in their turn, reacted on Chivalry and fostered it. Several orders and associations of knighthood arose among the crusaders, the members of which united the character of monks with that of warriors—probably without improving either. But a combination of this kind was one of the necessities of the age; and these orders supplied that necessity by furnishing additional illustrations of practical chivalry. They professed celibacy and poverty, and performed religious duties at the same time that they exercised themselves in arms, guarded roads from robberies, and afforded protection to the weak. The two principal orders were the Knights of the Temple, and those of St John. In the course of time, many persons of rank and property entered these fraternities, making over to them all their private estates. It was then that the governments of the countries to which they belonged, or in which their headquarters were located—notably the government of France—began to accuse them of great crimes,

Digitized by Google

with a view to deprive them of their possessions. It is not that the orders were ever so bad as they were represented; but the necessity for their existence having gone by, it was found profitable to abolish them; upon which their estates were forfeited to the king.

After the Crusades the history of France is taken up by a century of desolating wars, carried on with it by England, in support of the idle claim to the French throne set up by Edward III., by right of his mother Isabella, a French princess, which was barred by the *salique* law. Previous to this period there had been no very serious hostility between the two countries, which was rather fortunate than otherwise for France, as the Norman kings of England were very powerful and spirited, which their contemporaries on the French throne were not. The wars now commenced were carried on through the reigns of five French and five English sovereigns. The French had the advantage of fighting a war of defence in their own country; notwithstanding which, the English had invariably the advantage over them for several years. In almost all the actions that took place, the French displayed their usual contempt alike of danger and discipline, and the English their cool and deliberate intrepidity. The sufferings caused in France were not less deplorable than the wicked and angry passions which were excited, and the lasting resentments which were established. From this time forward *perfide* Albion and France were almost always at daggers-drawn; but the result of the hostilities between them in every age has proved incontestably the impossibility for either country to crush and subdue its opponent.

Digitized by Google

The victory of Agincourt was followed by the treaty of Troyes and the elevation of an English prince (Henry VI., a minor) to the throne of France, the Duke of Bedford acting as regent. This triumph, achieved after ninety-five years' fighting, seemed to realise for a time the dream of Edward III.; but it was exceedingly short-lived—the power of the English being overturned by a poor enthusiast, who imagined that she was inspired of heaven to avenge the miseries of France. Her enthusiasm having aroused the patriotic ardour of her countrymen, and, at the same time, impressed the English soldiery with fear, the result was the realisation of her dream, though she unfortunately fell into the hands of her enemies, by whom, with the characteristic enlightenment of the age, she was cruelly burnt at the stake. After some further reverses, the English finally retired from France; but, with a persistence which aggravated the bitterness already existing between the two countries, the title of king of France was retained by the king of England till the time of George III.! Among the lessons that the French learned from the English in these wars was the use of archery, which at this period was little known except in England. Edward III. is also said to have used firearms for the first time in the battle of Cressy, the same being then unknown in France, though they had been in use from an earlier time in Spain, where both Moors and Christians made use of gunpowder, the knowledge of which the former had brought with them from the east.

During the wars with the English—a short time after the battle of Poictiers—the misery of France was heightened by a rising of the mob, called the Jacquerie—the first popular revolt in the country

Digitized by Google

mentioned in history. For a long time the peasants had groaned under the oppressions of their masters, and latterly had also ceased to be protected by them. They now rose *en masse* to avenge their wrongs, with the cry of "Death to gentlemen!" The castles of the nobles and gentry were set on fire, and levelled with the ground; their wives and daughters were ravished and murdered; the nobles themselves were slain under exquisite torments, one of them being roasted before the eyes of his family, who were pressed to partake of the roast. "Saracen or Christian," says Froissart, "never committed such iniquities." Frenchmen alone were capable of them, whether in the age referred to or in later times; the horrid and the barbarous make up the natural element of the French mob. The nobles at length collected together for their mutual defence. Ten thousand of the mob were destroyed by the Duke of Orleans; twelve thousand by the king of Navarre. But there were nine thousand more at Meaux, which they had invested owing to the consort of the Dauphin and several other ladies of quality having betaken themselves thither as to a place of safety. The age of chivalry had not yet passed by; and knights and nobles from all directions eagerly flew to the rescue of the trembling dames. Their gallantry was successful; the peasants were routed with cruel slaughter—their insurrection drowned in blood: and this has been the characteristic feature in France ever since.

The evils of the feudal system in France were very early developed, and converted her into a mere knot of disjointed feudatories and duchies—such as Guienne, Flanders, Gascony, Toulouse, Burgundy, Vermandois, Bourbon, Normandy, and Bretagne—to

Digitized by Google

fuse which together into one integral dominion taxed for many years all the energies of some of her greatest sovereigns. Louis XI., though individually contemptible, distinguished himself greatly in this work, and was rewarded with much deserved popularity for his determinate opposition of the barons. To avert the danger which threatened them, the great feudal lords formed themselves into a league, which was pompously called the "League for the public good;" and, selecting Charles of Burgundy as their leader, they defeated the king at the battle of Montlhery. But the death of Charles shortly after, in a war with the Swiss, threw all the advantage again in the hands of the king; and the resistance of the barons being now circumvented with greater ease, a death-blow was given to the feudal system, which died out in France at about the same time that it expired in England. Of the great fiefs, Normandy was broken into subjection, while Burgundy, Bourbon, and Bretagne were annexed, the last in the reign of Francis I., by whom it was acquired by right of his wife, and merged in the Crown. At a later date, in the reign of Louis XIII., the work of finally crushing the nobility into subjection and establishing an irresponsible sovereignty, was carried out by Richelieu, who broke down the fabric of provincial feudalism by encouraging the residence of the barons in Paris in extravagance and luxury. He personally gave them an example of costly and luxurious living; the bait was eagerly caught; and they soon lost not only their provincial character, but also the means which had propped them up in power, and so ceased to give trouble to the Crown.

The breaking up of feudalism and personal service led to the organisation of armies regularly maintained

Digitized by Google

and paid, and this placed the king and his people altogether in a new relationship with each other. The tide of absolute power now set in with great strength in all places, and nowhere in greater strength than in France, where the authority of the sovereign became positively unrestricted. The task of domestic pacification was easily completed; the king, at the head of an army all his own, was soon everywhere hailed as the father of his people; and he was thus enabled to plan new acquisitions and distant conquests. The attention of Louis XII. was entirely engrossed by the affairs of Italy, and the whole reign of Francis I. was a contest for supremacy with Charles V. of Germany. The contention of Francis and Charles was particularly significant. They had both aspired to the emperorship of Germany, and professed, at least at the outset, to carry on their rivalry with emulation, not enmity—Francis, with a natural suavity of manner, describing it as a competition for the hand of the same mistress, which the more fortunate lover only could win, but the loss of which the rejected lover was not at liberty to resent. The success of Charles, however, gave rise to different feelings. An endeavour was made by an alliance with Henry VIII. of England to balance the power of Charles; but this led to nothing beyond a meeting between the two kings at a spot near Calais, which, from the splendour of the two courts, was called "the field of the cloth of gold,"—while Charles forestalled Francis by seeing Henry previously at Canterbury, and by securing the good offices of his minister Wolsey by a promise of the papacy. In the wars that followed, fortune, as Francis complained indignantly, failed him. His great general Bayard was killed, and he himself became a

Digitized by Google

prisoner after his defeat at Pavia, when he wrote to his mother, "All except honour is lost." That also was lost soon after; he was liberated on conditions which were never fulfilled. But he suffered more deceptions from Charles than he practised on him: and thus they struggled on, neither gaining any material advantage over the other; Charles being barely able to maintain his supremacy in countries of which the population repudiated France—while Francis, obliged to abandon Italy and the suzerainty over Flanders, received nothing to counterbalance his loss.

The era of Francis was that in which the middle ages expired, and his endeavours to patronise and foster literature and the arts were well sustained. But, on the other hand, he set his face against the Reformation of Religion, which was spreading rapidly in Germany and England; and his cruelties to the professors of the reformed doctrines, especially to the Waldenses of Piedmont, threw France an age behind the times. Providence was not opposed to the development of great things in France; but France herself was not true to the destiny designed for her, and even Providence exerted itself on her behalf in vain. In the reign of Louis VIII. the Albigeois of Languedoc anticipated the reformation of Luther, but were hunted to death for the open profession of their heretical opinions, many hundred thousands of men being destroyed by the sword. To despatch and root out the rest with celerity the Holy Inquisition was established, and conducted by the monks of the order of St Dominick with an atrocity, deceit, and cruelty that has never been surpassed even in barbarous and pagan lands. In the reign of Francis the persecutions were on the same scale, and some three thousand

Digitized by Google

persons were massacred for adhering to their religious belief. Notwithstanding such treatment, the Protestant religion made much progress in the country during the three succeeding reigns, and many illustrious converts were made, among whom were the king of Navarre, a principality between France and Spain, the Prince of Condé, and the Admiral Coligny; but this only plunged France deeper in sanguinary excess. Her fury culminated in the massacre of St Bartholomew and the assassinations of Blois, when the atrocities of 1792 were more than anticipated. Up to this time England and France had been running the race of civilisation and enlightenment together. It was now that France fell back, while England pressed forward under Henry VIII. and Elizabeth. The persecutions in France repressed free and enlightened inquiry; they did more, for they implanted those seeds of political convulsions which attained such luxuriant growth in subsequent years.

The wars commenced by Francis I. were continued by his successor Henry II., the object held in view being the same. The Rhine border has been the hobby of France from the earliest times, the idea entertained being that the natural boundary of France on the east is the Rhine from its mouth to its source, and thence along the crest of the Alps to the Mediterranean. For the realisation of this idea Henry II., who was persecuting his own Protestant subjects, undertook to defend those of Germany against their emperor, and with their connivance occupied by treachery Toul, Verdun, and Metz, which at the end of the war he was allowed by the peace of Chateau Cambresis to retain, to be fought for over and over again, as they have been in later days. In the mean time the flames of civil war kindled by religious

Digitized by Google

rancour blazed high, and the confusion was increased by the thunders of the Pope launched on the head of those who had presumed to arm themselves against the Crown.

The assassination of Henry III. brought forward a turning-point in the history of France. Was France now to have a Catholic or a Protestant king? Henry of Navarre, the nearest male heir, was a heretic. His claim to the throne was therefore contested by Philip II. of Spain, the son of the Emperor Charles V. The difference was got over by Henry agreeing to sink his religious convictions in deference to the wishes of his Catholic subjects, which at once put an end to a desolating war, and transferred the sceptre from the house of Valois to that of Bourbon. Henry did not, however, desert the interests of his Protestant subjects, though he compounded his own conscience for the throne. He became a convert to Catholicism with the settled purpose of thereby establishing toleration in religion at least throughout the country; and by the Edict of Nantes he secured to his Protestant subjects the free exercise of their religion, and an eligibility to all offices of the state. The other benefits conferred on the country by him were equally great. At his accession to the throne the kingdom was disunited; he succeeded in cementing the provinces together by his policy: the nobles, who were haughty and discontented, were humbled by his valour; the people, who were clamorous and oppressed, were conciliated and relieved. With the assistance of his minister Sully he was the first to introduce order into the finances, and discipline into the armies, of France; new manufactories were established by him, and new colonies planted; and, while he restored peace and plenty at home, he

Digitized by Google

rendered his kingdom great and formidable abroad. The power of Spain was checked by him; and he meditated designs against Austria with a view to prevent her finally from disturbing the peace of Europe, when the life of one of the best sovereigns France ever had was cut short by the hand of an assassin.

The reign of his successor, Louis XIII., was famous for the vigorous administration of his minister Richelieu, who, like several other of the greatest ministers of France, was drawn from the cloister, and exchanged the crosier for the seals. The war with the Huguenots was reopened by him, but immediately after he supported the Protestant cause in Sweden and Holland to secure possession of the country between Champagne and the Rhine. He quarrelled also with England, Spain, Italy, and Austria; his principle being the same with that adopted after him by Napoleon I., that no country could be great that was not actively engaged in successful war. The people he compared to mules, who were not to be left too much at their ease; the nobles, if not serviceable in war, were held to be utterly useless, and deserving to be reduced to the rank of the mules; and he humbled both at the same time that he established discipline and order among them. But the success of his arms and projects brought no real strength to France; freedom, which is the life of a people, was crushed out by him; and all his exertions only paved the way for that absolute despotism which was attained in the reign of Louis XIV.

The minority of Louis XIV. was distracted by a contest for the office of minister between two cardinals, Mazarin and De Retz, in which the former

Digitized by Google

triumphed. The early part of this reign was also distinguished by civil wars, known as the "wars of the Fronde," waged against the government by certain princes and nobles who felt aggrieved at their exclusion from high offices. The contest was carried on with the Frenchman's characteristic levity; the erection of barricades in the streets was diversified with fun and laughter; the partisans changed sides constantly, till a formal pacification took place, upon which the Fronde was dissolved.

After arriving at maturity, Louis assumed the reins of government himself, and established a pure despotism, to which the nation cheerfully submitted. In his own country, in Languedoc, very tyrannical measures were taken by him for exterminating the enemies of the Church, as many as ten thousand persons being put to death with cruel tortures—an operation which obtained the name of *dragonnades*, from being carried on by dragoons. The Edict of Nantes was also revoked, which forced four hundred thousand Protestants to quit France for Britain, Holland, Prussia, Switzerland, and America. The loss to France was immense; the gain to the countries to which they went was not less, as the exiles carried with them a knowledge of silk-spinning and weaving, dyeing, crystal-glass making, painting, watchmaking, &c., along with general refinement and intelligence. Another oppression exercised was the issue of *lettres de cachet*, or sealed warrants, of which not less than nine thousand were enforced by the sudden custody of those against whom they were directed, they being kept in the Bastile for years or for life, without trial of any sort in any court of justice. The "Man with the iron

Digitized by Google

mask," of whom so much has been written, was a prisoner of this reign, he having been, as the plenipotentiary of a sovereign prince (the Duke of Mantua), removed from prison to prison with a mask on his face to prevent his being recognised. He was thus kept in durance for twenty-four years, after which he died and was buried in the Bastile, all vestiges of his existence being removed. That this was possible in France at the end of the seventeenth and the beginning of the eighteenth century, is a sad commentary on the character of the French nation.

With oppressions of this nature every vestige of political independence was swept away. The assemblies of the States-General, a recognised institution since the days of Philip *le Bel* (1302), in which the *tiers état*, or third estate, met together with the nobles and the clergy, were no longer held; the municipal corporations established since the time of Louis IX. (St Louis) were now nominated by the Court; the several districts of the empire were placed under the control of Intendants; the Parliament of Paris was silenced whip in hand, and directed to mind its own business, and not to interfere with the ordinances of the king; and even the courts of justice were dictated to and interfered with at the pleasure of the Crown. The French people submitted to all this very quietly; the court was kept up with great splendour; the attractions of Paris were augmented by the erection of many fine buildings; luxury and taste were cultivated even in the matter of powdered periwigs and ornamental snuff-boxes; learned societies were also established for assisting

Digitized by Google

in the spread of education; and people readily acknowledged that the title of *Grande Monarque*, assumed by the king, was well earned.

Externally a career of aggression was adopted which aspired to the elevation of France by the depression of other countries, and which at one time promised to make Louis master of all Europe. He had brave and experienced generals to fight for him in Condé, Turenne, Luxemburg, Villars, Vauban, and others, and for some time their arms were everywhere crowned with success; but united against him in self-defence were all the great powers of the day—England, Holland, Spain, Germany, and the greatest part of Italy; and the series of victories gained by Marlborough at Blenheim, Ramillies, Oudenarde, and Malplaquet, soon turned the tide in favour of the allies, and led to the peace of Utrecht, the Frenchmen receiving the drubbing given to them with their usual lightheartedness, and consoling themselves with epigrams and satirical songs deriding Marlborough and his victories. Has not this ever been the characteristic feature of the nation? The Ethiopian may change his skin, the leopard his spots; the Frenchman his character, never. The result of all these wars was that, at the death of Louis XIV., France was politically and physically prostrate, with her resources exhausted, her trade ruined, her towns depopulated, even her military fame tarnished; yet such was the infatuation of the people that they remained dazzled by the spurious lustre of his reign to the last. No one monarch ever did more harm to an entire nation than he did, neither before nor after him.

Apart from the wars which disfigured it, the age

Digitized by Google

of Louis XIV. will be remembered as the Augustan age of France—the age of Pascal, Descartes, Corneille, Racine, Molière, Bossuet, Flechier, Massillon, Fenelon, Fontaine, Rochefoucauld, Bayle, and Le Sage. But what shall we say of the taste of a monarch who banished Fenelon from his court for having written *Telemachus*, which he understood to be a satire on himself? He appreciated nothing but adulation and flattery; and the learned societies which were founded by Richelieu, Mazarin, and Colbert, were filled by him with men best able to give a gloss to the profligacy of his court. But it is said of him that he patronised the arts and sciences with a liberal hand; the painter, the sculptor, and the architect were well befriended by him. One other great act of his reign will also be well remembered; he gave a most kind and generous reception to James II. of England in his adversity, when he was obliged to run away from his throne.

Louis XIV. was succeeded by his great-grandson Louis XV. The minority of the latter was disturbed by the intrigues and ambition of the Spanish court, which did not terminate till the fall of Alberoni in 1719. The administration of Cardinal Fleury, as prime minister of France, was successful; but after the cardinal's death the king was swayed entirely by his mistresses, Madame Pompadour and others, who seriously imperilled the interests of the State. In this reign France and England were again opposed in the wars for the Austrian succession, and the Duke of Cumberland was signally defeated by Marshal Saxe at the battles of Fontenoy and Laupfelt. The English were more successful in the Seven Years' War which followed, and inflicted great terri-

Digitized by Google

torial losses on France which she was never able to recover. In Europe the French were defeated at Minden; in America at Quebec, which resulted in Canada being wrested from them; and in India they sustained a series of defeats which, by shrivelling up their power there, developed that of Britain. Both in the East and West the chances of France becoming the ascendant power were for many years much greater than those of England. France never wanted heroes at either place to uphold her fame; but, unfortunately, the French are never able to endure reverses, and always sink under them, while Britain as invariably rises greater from her defeats. It was only the want of stamina in the national character that lost to France all her foreign possessions, which once lost were never recovered.

The age of Louis XV. was the age of Montesquieu, Rousseau, Voltaire, Buffon, Raynal, Rollin, Marmontel, Diderot, and D'Alembert; so that, so far as literary pre-eminence was concerned, the period was nearly as brilliant as the one that had preceded it. Unfortunately, the staff of authors named comprised some powerful and intolerant writers who upheld novel doctrines in philosophy and morals, and treated all questions of political life with freedom bordering on mockery. This unsettled the minds of those who depended on them for instruction, and paved the way for the convulsions which followed a short while after. It is true that the people who caused those convulsions could not read books, but it is also true that they did manage to acquire the sentiments expressed in them and their irreverent *persiflage* at second-hand. The great revolutionary classes were the artisans—not the peasantry. The former learn things more easily than the latter, and

Digitized by Google

observe distinctions more narrowly. Smarting under their own degradation and poverty, they compared it with the effeminate splendour of the higher classes around them. They also saw and felt that the burden imposed on the nation by the wars and expenses of the last two reigns had been unequally distributed, the main portion of taxation to meet it having been imposed on the labouring classes, while the higher classes were allowed to go free. With this knowledge they were now taught to deride the men and institutions whom they had hitherto regarded with respect; and the idea of "liberty, equality, and fraternity," was thus in a manner forced upon them. The different classes of the community were violently separated from each other. The higher classes laughed at the aspirations of the mob, and at the same time waged war among themselves, the ancient nobility looking down with contempt on the upstart class—the nobles of the robe, as they called them—the statesmen, lawyers, and magistrates, who had secured wealth, bought estates, and acquired patents of nobility. The unprivileged orders—the merchants, traders, and citizens—regarded all titled idlers with equal disgust, and were awaiting with savage impatience the hour of action. What egged them on still more was the example of other nations before them. The expulsion of the Stuarts from the throne of England was yet fresh in their memory. After that the Americans had risen, and fought for and earned their independence. "What others dare, I dare too," was naturally the cry of the Frenchman. He remembered that he had assisted America in throwing off her yoke. Could he not fight as hard for his own rights? Thus did the storm gather that burst on the head of Louis XVI.

Digitized by Google

Correctly has the Revolution been called a revolution of *ideas*. It was a war of the people against all rights operating against them. It warred against power, privilege, and customs, endangering even real rights and salutary institutions. But the motives were not the less pure because the issue was so unfortunate.

The tempest was foreseen some thirty or forty years before it burst forth, but no attempts were made to avert the approaching danger, because the governments of both Louis XV. and Louis XVI. were equally unfit to deal with the crisis. The latter worked on in its accustomed groove, lulled into a fatal security by its very imbecility. The public income having become inadequate to meet the wants of the state, and the Parliament of Paris having refused to sanction the imposition of further taxes, the States-General, or the assembly of the representatives of the three orders of nobility, church, and commons, was summoned by the king. The first resolution carried in the Assembly was that they would vote as one body, not as three distinct bodies, and this threw all the power in the hands of the commons exclusively, on account of their numerical superiority. Thus was the Revolution virtually commenced. The Assembly next proceeded to assert their independence, and many salutary innovations were made. The first scenes were confined to debates upon the declaration of the rights of the citizens, to the forced abolition of all prerogatives and privileges, and to the repression of all abuses, old and new. A rage for republican simplicity then gave way to an admiration for the English constitution; and, in imitation of it, France was declared to be a constitutional monarchy, with an Assembly to

Digitized by Google

make laws, a limited right of veto being left to the king. But here the purity of the movement terminated; the wild and inflamed populace did not understand bare rights; the men who led them on did not seek for rights only. The provision of veto by the king displeased the mob, and on the 5th October 1789 the insurrection broke out by beat of drum, the people shouting on all sides for bread! In the States-General the Jacobin faction, or violent democrats, prevailed; and, while the mob committed the greatest barbarities in the streets, the Assembly backed them by abolishing the order of nobility, and by announcing that no man was to possess any distinction beyond that arising from his virtues. The terms *monsieur* and *madame* were discontinued; every man was a *citizen*, and every woman a *citoyenne*. The unmitigated barbarism that followed has never been equalled. A people justly proud of their philosophy, literature, and refinement, at once became worse than American and Australian savages. The outrage culminated by the palace being attacked, upon which the royal family was consigned to prison.

The successful revolutionists now assembled under the name of the National Convention, the great leaders of which were Robespierre, Danton, Marat, St Just, and Condorcet. The king was deposed, tried, condemned, and guillotined. France was well pleased, but all Europe was horrified and aghast. The case was not analogous to that of Charles I. of England, for Louis had done nothing to deserve his fate. Prussia had invaded France to prevent the crime, but was beaten back. War was at the same time declared against the other powers that had tried to interfere—namely, Austria, England, Spain, and Holland. The French were prepared

Digitized by Google

to fight against all comers, and well it were if they had been prepared for that only. France was the country where chivalry was born; France was also the country where chivalry first ceased to exist. Not a spark of chivalry was anywhere elicited when Marie Antoinette was carried to the place of execution. The ferocity of the hour triumphed over all kindly feelings; the queen suffered as her husband had done, her only crime that she was his wife. These were followed by crowds of other victims, old and young, of both sexes, of every rank in life, who were all capriciously condemned and executed. This has well been named in history the "Reign of Terror," when the Jacobins had everything in their own way, till their virulence was exhausted on each other. It is said that Danton exclaimed in his last moments, "I see that in revolutions the greatest rascal lives last." That rascal was Robespierre, who was guillotined in July 1794.

The reign of terror was overturned by a second revolution, by which the constitution was reorganised, the government being lodged in two councils —namely, the Legislative Council consisting of 500 members, and the Council of Elders consisting of 250 members, by both of which the executive authority was assigned to a Directory of five members. The republican armies were everywhere successful; Holland was subdued, Spain and Prussia were compelled to make peace, and the general coalition against France was dissolved. But there were still enemies to fight with, in England, Austria, and Italy. The campaign in Italy brought the military genius of Bonaparte into prominence, and compelled Austria to make peace. Since the days of Louis XIV. the arms of France were never so triumphant

Digitized by Google

as now; and, elated by their Italian victories, the Directory first formed the design of invading England, which was afterwards modified, at the suggestion of Napoleon, to an attack on Egypt as preparatory to the conquest of India. The battles of the Pyramids and of Mount Tabor seemed to facilitate this design, till the victory of Nelson over the French fleet at Aboukir Bay dispelled the illusion by cutting off the invading force from Europe.

The third revolution was effected by Bonaparte, who, seeing that the game in Egypt was over, came back to France and dissolved the Directory, establishing in place of it a Senate and three Consuls, and becoming the First Consul himself. The ferocity of the Revolution had died out; people now sought protection from anarchy and violence; and all hailed with satisfaction a soldier at the head of the state, as able to afford the protection that was required. The prestige of the French arms had at this time been well established. With imperfect means at her disposal, France had withstood a world in arms. She had acquired dominion in Italy, taken possession of Switzerland, made the Rhine the boundary of France, and was mistress of Holland and Belgium. England, deserted by pusillanimous allies, had been compelled to take to the defensive. A coalition formed against her by the naval powers — France, Russia, and Denmark — she rendered abortive by destroying the Danish fleet. After that she was once more able to turn the cards on France, and formed another coalition against her which was joined by Russia. Nor was this displeasing to Bonaparte, who was anxious for an opportunity to renew the glories of his Italian campaign. The battles of Marengo and Hohenlinden

Digitized by Google

silenced Austria; but England was able to wrench Malta from the Consulate, being already supreme at sea. She was also able to defeat the French in Egypt, where Abercromby gained the battle of Alexandria.

By the fourth revolution the First Consul became Emperor. The frenzy of "liberty, equality, and fraternity" was now over; the dethronement and murder of a king and all the attendant horrors, had passed for nought; within twelve years after everything was forgotten, and the nation quietly submitted to military despotism. The wars of the Empire are well known. Aided by generals of real ability, with an army recruited by conscription to any desired amount, Napoleon indulged in dreams of universal conquest. One nation of all the European states, with Paris for the capital of the world, was the utopian idea uppermost in his mind, which he really believed it was his destiny to accomplish. The rapidity of his victories marked a new master in the art of war. Austria was repeatedly beaten, Prussia defeated and overrun, and Russia compelled to accept terms of peace. In Prussia it was the queen who excited the people to resistance; but the men were not equally high-spirited and resolute, and the defeats at Jena and Auerstadt led to the triumphal occupation of Berlin. Similarly, Austria, thrice beaten before, sustained a final defeat at Wagram, which led to the occupation of Vienna, loss of territory, and a crushing indemnity. The old German Empire was thus dissolved, and a union of sixteen princes was formed in lieu of it, and taken under the protecting wing of France. The subjection of England was now sedulously sought for, and Napoleon seriously contemplated invading

Digitized by Google

her, and completed the preparations necessary for carrying out his design. But the fleet under Villeneuve, which was to have escorted the invader across the Channel, was intercepted by Nelson, and afterwards destroyed at Trafalgar, and thus was one favourite scheme of the *petit caporal* baffled for ever. He nevertheless continued to issue from Berlin decrees placing the British Isles in a state of blockade, without having any ships to enforce his decrees; and it was afterwards a complaint against Spain and Portugal that they had disregarded these decrees, which led to the occupation of Spain by the French, and the elevation of a Bonaparte to the throne of that country. But the might of England was thrown into the scale on the side of Spain, and, after a hard struggle, Napoleon was checkmated. It is curious that, notwithstanding his continuous triumph over every other power, his contentions with England were uniformly unfortunate. Whether in Egypt, Calabria, or Spain, the English were always able to resist him effectually, till he was finally overthrown by their "sepoy general," as Wellington was contemptuously called by him.

Napoleon was an autocrat; but when that is said, all is said that can be said against him as a ruler. France was not then, is not now, fit for anything better than despotism; and as a despot he ruled over her well. The country wanted a capacious mind and a strong hand, and he had both. His civil rule was faultless, and brought order out of chaos and confusion. His military genius did more harm; but it was just the thing France appreciated, and it kept her in good-humour long. His inordinate ambition was his only vice, and wrought his fall. His wish to invade Britain was childish; it

Digitized by Google

was fortunate for himself that he was not able to carry out the idea. The invasion of Russia was another mistake. He was not able to conquer her, and came back, not humiliated only, but thoroughly beaten. He might have been a greater sovereign than Louis XIV. but for these fruitless attempts; he can now be regarded only as akin to

"Macedonia's madman and the Swede."

One cause of the great popularity of his military expeditions was the amount of plunder they invariably brought to the country. For a number of years half the public expenditure was thus covered by war contributions, the armies being supported, besides, at the cost of the countries they entered. Half the amount of taxation was thus saved, at the same time that the inebriation of military glory was deliciously enjoyed.

The retreat from Moscow dealt a severe blow, but after it the French were yet able to win the battles of Lützen, Bautzen, and Dresden. The effect of these victories was, however, neutralised by the defeat at Leipsic, which enabled the Prussian and German forces to capture Paris, just when Soult was being driven out of Spain by the English. A power depending on one man personally has always a precarious tenure. There was no alternative now but for the victor of many battles to fly. A British ship conveyed him to Elba, and the fickle Frenchmen were not sorry that he was thus got rid of. But he turned up again a short time after, when the French of course veered round, or, at all events, the French generals and army received him back with enthusiasm. The hunters around him were also equally alert; all the great powers promptly prepared for a final struggle.

Digitized by Google

Napoleon returned from Elba in March 1815. On the 16th June he defeated the Prussians under Blucher at Ligny. Two days after, the two greatest strategists of the age—the "sepoy" and the *petit caporal*—were confronted on nearly equal terms, each at the head of an army of about 75,000 men, on the field of Waterloo. The action was necessarily well contested; but the issue was not doubtful when the Prussians appeared on the field, upon which the French were thoroughly routed. The power of Napoleon was now entirely prostrated, though, compared with more recent engagements, the battle of Waterloo was only a second-rate fight. France, which had hitherto been so faithful to her chief, notwithstanding the whitening bones of her sons in Egypt, Russia, and on fifty battle-fields, now made a resolute stand against the call for more troops. Napoleon was obliged to abdicate. His subsequent attempt to embark for the United States was intercepted, and at the desire of all the great powers, he was despatched to St Helena, where he died. The treatment he met with was extraordinary, and not justified by any existing law. He was exiled for life simply as a disturber of the peace of Europe, by those who had him in their power. But there is no doubt that the punishment, legal or illegal, was well merited. It was in the power of Napoleon to have become a blessing to the country he ruled over; he had many of the qualities which make a great and useful sovereign; but he chose his part differently, and paid a suitable penalty for having done so.

The fifth revolution was that which restored the white cockade of the old monarchy, by raising Louis XVIII. to the throne on the retirement of Napoleon

Digitized by Google

to Elba. The reign of the king was interrupted for a hundred days on the return of Napoleon in 1815, but was resumed after the battle of Waterloo. It was now that the French for the first time got a constitution which assimilated the government as much as possible to that of Britain, being comprised of a king with a responsible ministry, a chamber of peers nominated by the Crown, and a chamber of deputies elected by qualified voters. They also now obtained freedom of the press within certain limitations, liberty of conscience, and equality of taxation. The reign of Charles X., who succeeded Louis, is memorable for the acquisition of Algiers, after the destruction of a nest of corsairs—the pest of the seas; but this only existing dependency of France has always been felt as a grievous burden. The character of Charles was oppressive, and gave rise to a rebellion, or the sixth revolution, by which the king was deposed and banished, and his branch of the Bourbon family declared incapable of holding the throne, which brought forward the younger, or Orleans branch, and placed Louis Philippe on the throne.

A general summary of the Orleans rule is that it was beyond example expensive to the people, and that it did not altogether recognise the public weal as the object of government. On the other hand, a state of peace permitted the development of the resources of the country, and many internal improvements were made. But the king was not liked; and there was a party in existence with strong democratic tendencies. The cry on all sides now was for more freedom, and for unrestricted discussion on political and religious subjects. The French have never understood constitutional agita-

Digitized by Google

tion; an easily excited populace was quickly carried beyond the bounds of discretion. This inaugurated the seventh revolution: the streets of Paris were barricaded; the king being dethroned escaped with difficulty to England, and a republic was set up.

The republic established was soon endangered by the outbreak of social barbarism, very similar to that which had disgraced France from 1792 to 1795. The name of Bonaparte had intermediately fallen into a species of oblivion; but after the death of the duke of Reichstadt in 1832, was revived in Louis Napoleon, who now came forward to the rescue of France, and was unanimously elected President in 1848. An eighth revolution dissolved the republic —the people, who were labouring under apprehensions of falling again under the rule of the Parisian rabble, gladly accepting in place of it an arbitrary government, which promised at least to suffer them to live in peace and security. The President now assumed the name of Dictator. He was assisted by a Council of State, a Senate, and a Legislative Council; but in everything he had his own way, and wielded absolute authority, and shortly after was chosen Emperor.

The second empire was in all material points of good government a failure. It suppressed liberty, impeded thought, and was responsible for the most fatal of modern wars, under which France fell without an effort and without a friend. But still it gave what the Frenchman wanted—protection from revolutions, and a fixity of administration. A secure government is France's greatest need; she cannot afford to be governed by roughs, to be in constant danger of disturbing innovations. This was well understood by Napoleon III., and his particular

Digitized by Google

anxiety to found a dynasty made him especially quiet and circumspect; and considerable national progress was necessarily made during his reign, and new industries were developed. The best service he did to France was to set at rest the national antipathy against England; he went so far as to establish an alliance between the two countries, and even to exchange with the English a treaty of commerce; and his rule might have been more successful than it turned out in the sequel, if the French character had been better formed.

The rock on which he stumbled was the Frenchman's vanity, which has never been equalled. Since the epoch of Richelieu and Louis XIV., France had been accustomed to play the first *rôle* among European nations, and in this claim she was strengthened by the achievements of Napoleon I. The claim was based on her strong politico-military organisation, and still more on the classical literature which in the course of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries had grown up in the country, and which had made her language and culture supreme in Europe. This pre-eminence France had paraded at all times, and all her sovereigns had always found it convenient to pamper the frailty. Napoleon's reign would not have been worth an hour's purchase if he had adopted a different course. The dance round the golden calf—differently called "glory," "fame," and "*éclat*"—was the tenure on which he held the throne; and the dance-master had no alternative but to lead on the dance. There was first the Crimean war, in which Napoleon proved to the satisfaction of his people that they were in all respects superior, not only to their opponents the Russians, but also to their allies the

Digitized by Google

English — a pleasing assurance which kept the Frenchmen satisfied for a time. Next came on the war for the union of Italy, in which Napoleon assisted, not for the sake of the object, which he did not care for, but as a quixotic folly that would divert his people in the manner they wished to be played with. Lombardy and the Duchies were wrested from Austria and transferred to Piedmont. This in itself was a great thing for the Frenchman, for it raised him in renown. To humour him yet further, Nice and Savoy were annexed, a rectification of the frontier of France which puffed him up with pride. The emperor's next undertaking, the Mexican war, was a blunder, and ended in misfortune; the Reds looked sour over it, and the nation was discontented. The bold showman had now to make up for the mischance of the game, and retrieve his laurels. He turned his eyes wistfully to the eastern frontier of France, on which ages of aspirations were based. Since the reconstruction of Germany, after the overthrow of the first empire, war between the two countries had been but a question of time. It had been deferred because the unity of Germany had not yet been fully accomplished, all that the war of liberation (1813-14) had effected being the restoration of a motley group of independent states. The success of Prussia at Sadowa changed the position of affairs by realising the idea of a united Germany at last. But instead of going to war with a powerful state about it, Napoleon preferred the safer course of claiming black-mail for having kept the peace. Prussia, however, refused to yield one inch of German soil. Even if Napoleon had wished to keep the peace with her after that he could not have done so, for all France—the army, and after it

Digitized by Google

the people—refused to accept the position of a rivalry with Prussia, as head of the German confederation, on equal terms. This was the real cause of the Franco-German war; France fought solely for the championship of Europe. Prussia had long foreseen the contingencies likely to arise, and was armed to the teeth; but she knew how to wait and when to strike. The overweening confidence of France made her less wary. A mere pretext for war was found and taken advantage of with an impertinence and levity of which France alone was capable, and with an inexcusable ignorance of the actual strength of Prussia. The ready hand of the gauntleted Teuton gave back the blow with tremendous effect. After the humiliating defeats which were sustained, the whole blame of the war was attempted to be cast on Napoleon III., who, as dancing-master to the nation, was doubtless to blame, but whose office made it obligatory on him to keep up the dance the nation wanted. It was also attempted to throw the responsibility of the war on Prussia, which, it was alleged, had secretly armed for the purpose. But the real responsibility rested with France alone, which had made no secret of her wish to reassume the Rhine boundary at fitting time, and had thus forced the Prussians to be prepared for the occasion. French vanity now required a sacrifice, and Napoleon III. was deposed. The only thing that could save the country now, it was assumed, was a republic, for which among the populace there was a clamorous demand. This led to her present provisional form of government. It is hard to say where France will land at last.

The Germans, constrained to defend themselves, did so with hearty goodwill. The self-importance

Digitized by Google

of the Frenchman received a terrible rebuff. All Europe had reckoned that there would be a great and formidable rising of the nation after its first reverses, but there was nothing approaching to it. The beating was received more quietly than it would have been received, perhaps, by any other nation in Europe. It was now Germany's turn to claim territorial compensation, and she did so; but what she did claim was not French but German ground, long separated from Germany, but the restoration of which now was nothing but an act of political justice. It was not, however, as an act of political justice only that it was claimed; it was claimed as an act of political necessity to render it impossible for France to retaliate; to make the last act the *very last*. As Carlyle puts it in his own quaint manner: "France has got her first lesson, and well will it be if she can learn her lesson honestly. If she cannot, she will get another, and even another: learnt the lesson must be." For her present position France has none to blame but herself.

The government of France, call it by what name you please, has never been anything but a species of despotism. It is true that the nation has awakened at intervals to a consciousness of its position, and strongly asserted its rights. But the vigour thus displayed was never abiding; and, if it succeeded at times in securing the blessing of equal laws, equal taxation, and the recognition of individual rights, those blessings were surrendered again without hesitation at the shrine of absolute power—either in the shape of a monarchy or of a democracy—for the fancied prizes of greatness and glory, which the national mind has, in all ages, so devoutly worshipped, such greatness and glory being better prized

Digitized by Google

than half-developed rights and privileges. It is not that the Frenchman does not wish for or appreciate social privileges to the same extent as they are appreciated in other countries. He does want them, and he does appreciate them: but he aspires at perfection in everything; he will not have any privileges in an imperfect state of development,—in such a state as the Briton and the American would, for the time being, be satisfied with. He worships the ideal in everything, and anything short of the ideal appears to him scarcely worth having. He calls the revolutions glorious, notwithstanding the atrocities connected with them, because of the ideal that was attempted to be secured by them. He will not come down from that elevation of thought to the actual realities of existence. He still believes that his ideal is attainable, that the classes which stand lowest in the social scale will, and can, be brought to an absolute equality with the higher and educated classes. For such a nation there is no position between despotism and revolution.

The distinguishing features of the French character are impulsiveness, novelty, vanity, fickleness, and a deficiency of the reflective and moral faculties. The upper classes are more vicious and more extravagant than in other countries; but the middle and lower classes are not so. There is, in ordinary times at least, less drunkenness and brutality among these classes than in other places, and the constantly accumulating wealth of France is the best proof of the industry and frugality of the people at large. In the contest for superiority in manufactures, arts, and learning, France has been more than a match for Germany, and quite a match even for England. There is no literature so rich as that of

Digitized by Google

France ; and the arts and sciences claim a long list of renowned Frenchmen. As in England, however, there has been a decline in the educational standard in recent years, markedly since the first revolution ; and, barring noticeable exceptions, the rage now is for frivolous and undignified mediocrity. The greatest superiority of France over other countries is in her refinement and civilisation, in both of which the post of honour is still her own.

The whole world now wishes a stable government for France. No confidence is anywhere felt in the extraordinary provisional government which has been set up, which is represented by a tottering Executive tethered to a vacillating Assembly. A government on the English or American plan will never work in the country, for the ideas, tastes, and habits required for working it do not exist in France, and sooner or later Imperialism must therefore be restored to it. It is believed that this is also the view entertained by the present President himself, who is secretly desirous of reviving the Empire. His seven years' authority, he says, he will maintain ; but it is more than probable that he will play his cards intermediately so effectually as to allow of the Prince Imperial ascending his father's throne, in 1880, without a massacre or even a coerced election.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

GERMANY.

THOSE who are familiar with the pages of Gibbon will not require any detailed description of the state of Germany prior to the dissolution of the Roman empire. It will be enough to state that the country so named, from which all the civilised nations of modern Europe derive their descent, was anciently inhabited by a race of hardy barbarians, differently named in different places, but all classed under the general designation of Goths, who, when they united for a common purpose, assumed the name of Alemanni or Germannen, from which that of Germany is derived. They were distinguished by their huge stature, fair complexion, and light-blue eyes, the several subdivisions of the race being variously known as Ostrogoths, Visigoths, Suevi, Gepidæ, Marcomanni, &c., with outlying tribes called Saxons, Franks, and Burgundians. Some authorities make out that all these nations came originally from Asia, probably from the east of the Caspian; while others, with greater reason, assert that they were born in the forests of Germany, whence they migrated eastwards, but were again brought back by the rushing hordes that burst upon Europe from Tartary.

Digitized by Google

They were not all of them savages, but the tribes who pressed on them from the East—the Huns, Alans, Bulgars, &c.—were. Of the German tribes it is said that they had all the virtues of which barbarians are susceptible: the men being valiant, courteous, and hospitable, and the women chaste, meriting the confidence and esteem in which they were generally held. On the other hand, all the tribes were fierce, easily provoked, and always at war, though what they were principally distinguished for was their unconquerable love of liberty, the authority of kings being acknowledged by certain tribes only, while all reserved to themselves the rights of men. The bravest warriors were selected to lead their respective clans in time of war; and, similarly, princes were chosen in time of peace to administer justice and settle differences among them; but neither leader nor prince had the power to punish with death, or to imprison, or to strike.

It has been stated in the last chapter how, on the disruption of the Roman empire, the Franks and Burgundians passed over into Gaul and occupied it. Simultaneously with that movement the Visigoths passed into Spain and Italy, and the Saxons into Britain, while the remaining races, including such of the Franks and Saxons as were left behind, settled themselves in Germany, or the country contained within the Rhine, the Baltic, the Vistula, the northern mountains of Bohemia, and the river Maine. Christianity was established among these chiefly by Anglo-Saxon missionaries, of whom Winifred was the first; so that the debt which England owed Germany for stocking her with the Anglo-Saxon race was, even at this early period, fully repaid. Then followed the conquests of Charles Martel, when each

Digitized by Google

rude tribe, as it was subjugated, was invited to receive the religion of Rome, so that the sword and the Gospel went hand in hand in Germany, as the sword and the Koran had done previously in Asia, though not exactly in the same sense. The Anglo-Saxon missionaries also collected the people into towns, and introduced the elements of civilisation among them, and they founded those monasteries which became asylums of peace during the violent convulsions that disturbed the country during the middle ages.

In the eighth century, the Franks, having become a great power under Charlemagne, were able to bring the races of Germany under subjection, the only people who gave them trouble being the Saxon remnants who had not been converted, who were not overcome till after a long and bloody war. The empire of Charlemagne was thus extended from the Ebro to the Elbe, and from the ocean to the Vistula, the Theiss, and the Save. Intermediately the Papal See had found means to secure a jurisdiction, both temporal and spiritual, over the defunct empire of the West; and, being sorely troubled by the Lombards, who had established themselves in Italy, Adrian I. applied to Charlemagne for aid against them, upon which Lombardy was conquered and Charlemagne crowned king of Italy. After this, the Pope, to secure continued protection from the conqueror, declared him emperor, reviving the Western empire; and it was agreed between them that the Pontiff should reside at Rome, and the temporal Cæsar beyond the Alps—nearer to the centre of his territories. From this time till the reign of Charles the Simple, the affairs of Germany are interwoven with those of France, and the history of

Digitized by Google

the two countries is necessarily the same. The succession to the empire being destined by Charlemagne for his son, he made him king of Italy to begin with, upon which that appellation became equivalent to the old designation of Cæsar; and, as many emperors contented themselves with the lower title till they were actually crowned at Rome, the inference was established that the sovereign was not qualified to act as emperor till after his consecration by the Pope. Adrian IV., in writing to Frederick Barbarossa on the subject, laid down the premises in the following words: "The Roman empire was translated from the Greeks to the Germans; but the king of the Teutons was not called emperor before he was crowned by the apostolic power. Before his consecration he was king; after it he became emperor. Of whom, then, but of us, doth he hold the empire? From the election of his own princes he enjoys the name of king; from our consecration he derives the appellation of emperor, Augustus, and Cæsar: therefore through us he governs. . . . Whatever he hath as emperor, he hath from us; for as Zacharias transferred the empire from the Greeks to the Germans, so can we transfer it from the Germans to the Greeks."

The successors of Charlemagne possessed the empire by hereditary right, and exercised full regal powers, as he had done, throughout the entire extent of their dominions. But the effeminacy of some of these rulers disgusted the Germans, and when the Normans were bought off by the French, the provocation became insufferable, and the principal nations of Germany—the Franks, Suabians, Bavarians, Saxons, and Thuringians—assembled in full diet and elected a separate emperor for them-

Digitized by Google

selves. The crown of Germany was from this time parted for ever from that of France. The French policy of hereditary succession was at the same time overthrown; the dukes, margraves, and counts of the empire, with the archbishops, bishops, and abbots, constituting themselves the legitimate electors of the chief by whom they would be governed. The succession thus became elective, though, as a rule, a member of the reigning house was generally chosen. In time the electors and princes insensibly acquired rights and ruling privileges within their estates, by which the whole country was divided into independent principalities, and this left to the emperors a general supremacy only, which, being indefinite, varied according to the vigour of the arm by which it was swayed.

The first chief selected by the Germans was Arnulf, Duke of Carinthia; but he died shortly after, upon which Conrad was elected, and founded the house of Saxony. The main divisions of German society at this time were four—namely, (1) the slaves; (2) the freedmen; (3) the freemen; and (4) the nobles. The first comprised the captives taken in war, all debtors unable to meet their engagements, and convicted criminals. Several of these were allowed to purchase their emancipation with the produce of their labour, and these were known as freedmen. The warriors were all freemen; and the princes, dukes, and counts they served were the nobles, who held their estates under the feudal system on the obligation of service, with an interminable system of subdivisions under them, by which the number of proprietors was immensely multiplied, and their reciprocal relations made exceedingly complicated. One thing was clearly un-

Digitized by Google

derstood, that every freeman was bound to follow the banner of his local chief wherever it might lead to, and this necessarily threw a great amount of authority in the hands of the greater chiefs, and made them virtually independent. The bolder warriors were enabled by it to assume great powers, and often to commit great crimes, which gave rise to much internal disorder, at the same time that externally the nation was perpetually harassed by the Slavonians from one side and the Huns from another.

The first sovereign who consolidated the empire was Henry, surnamed the Fowler, so called from his having been much addicted to the pursuit of birds, in which amusement he was actually engaged when he received the news of his elevation. His success was owing, not only to the prowess of his arms, which was great, but also to his readiness at conciliation, by which he reconciled several of his enemies, including the dukes of Suabia and Bavaria, to his rule. He also induced the duke of Lorraine to join the Germanic confederation, prevailing on Charles the Simple of France to renounce his claims on the province and allow it to secede. He at the same time beat back the Huns, to whom it had hitherto been customary to pay black-mail, which he refused; was the first in Germany to surround open towns and villages with ditches and walls for their protection; established the march of Meissen against the Slavonians; and encouraged industry and arts of every description. The reign of his successor, Otho the Great, was equally successful, Italy being reduced by him and added to the empire; while several victories were won over the Slavonians, Danes, and Huns, the defeat of the last people enabling him

Digitized by Google

further to consolidate the margravate of Austria. What the reign of Otho was, however, principally famous for, was his quarrel with Pope John, whom he deposed, setting up Leo VIII. in his place; whereby the right of the emperor to nominate the Pope was originated. Even before this time the rival pretensions of the Empire and the Papal See had, from the time of the Carlovingians, often disturbed the public tranquillity. It became worse now. The great Charlemagne had received regal consecration at the hands of the spiritual Cæsar, and the Popes had based on that the principle that the blessing of the Church was necessary to the assumption of the imperial title. A corresponding privilege as regards the election of the Pope came henceforth to be claimed by the emperors, and the quarrels which arose from the arrogation of these different rights were incessant.

The Saxon dynasty ended with the reign of Henry II., who abstained from the bed of his wife, and left no heir. A great part of the time of this prince was taken up by the disturbances created by the dukes and their military dependants the counts and barons, who in Germany very early assumed the character of bandits, and perpetrated acts of violence which even bandits would have blushed at. The reason of this apparently was the rapid deterioration of the national character, which, though still as pugnacious as before, had almost forgotten its original impassioned love of liberty, and now asserted the rights of manhood only by an excess in eating, drinking, and debauchery. Notwithstanding this drawback, however, considerable consolidation was received by the empire during the Saxon period, and several new margravates were added, in the same

Digitized by Google

manner as the Americans add new States to their union. The position of the empire was, by these means, raised in the scale of nations, and even the proud Cæsars of the East were induced to ally themselves by marriage with the Cæsars of the West.

The Franconian dynasty was commenced in 1024, by the election of Conrad II., a nobleman of Franconia, in whose time Burgundy was annexed. The greatest king of the line was Henry IV.; but his reign was rendered unhappy and unprofitable by fresh discords with the Pope. On the one side the Papal See aspired to a temporal as well as spiritual supremacy over Germany, which Henry would not allow; on the other, the emperor assumed a right of investing bishops with the crosier and the ring in token of their submission to him, which the Pope violently opposed. The emperor deposed the Pope and committed great disorders in the Pontifical States. The Pope obtained greater advantages by deposing and excommunicating the emperor, which raised his own son and subjects against him. After a twenty years' war, in which he fought sixty battles, the emperor was barely able to pacify the empire and subdue his eldest son. But the success was momentary, as his second son rebelled immediately after, and wresting the sceptre from him, reduced him to such straits that in his last days he wanted even the necessaries of life. The private life of this emperor was execrable; his licentious amours dishonoured the noblest families; nay, he did not even spare his own, for it is said that he violated his sister, and made his son defile his step-mother's bed. But in all other respects he was a great king, who met the difficulties of his position with singular energy and firmness.

Digitized by Google

From this time to the reign of Rodolph I. the history of Germany is principally remarkable for a continuous struggle of two centuries between the emperors and the Popes, the papal power having now risen to its greatest height. Henry V. endeavoured to settle all differences forcibly by capturing the Pope; but, after the death of his captive, Pascal, Calixtus II., though a relation of the emperor, pressed on him with greater pertinacity, revived the excommunication against him, and obliged him to effect a compromise, whereby he renounced the right of investing bishops with the emblems of their pastoral duty, the ring and the crosier, and only retained the right of conferring temporalities on them by the emblem of the sceptre. In the reign of Lothario, the Saxon, still farther concessions had to be made, and the emperor gave up his right to be present at ecclesiastical elections, the homage of the bishops to him being changed to a vain oath of fidelity and obedience. In other respects also the power of the empire was at this time on the decline, particularly on account of the internal feuds of the nobles, who were not only hostile to the sovereign, but always at war with each other. Under the feudal system, as dominant in Germany, military service was obligatory on all; but this only qualified the dukes and counts to aspire at independence, the freemen being held bound to follow the banners of their local chiefs, while the local chiefs, intent on mere selfish objects, did not consider themselves equally bound to follow the imperial standard, except for the defence of the country against foreign invaders. This, towards the close of the Franconian period, led to the raising of mercenary troops by the emperors, as they could no longer depend on a feudal army; and, as both the

Digitized by Google

mercenary troops and ducal forces shared in the predatory habits of the German nobles, the whole country was laid under contribution and plundered by them, which there was no power strong enough to prevent. Worse still, the excesses committed constantly included the violation of women, an atrocity which, at this age, seems to have been most common in Germany.

With the Suabian dynasty originated the terms Guelph and Ghibeline, which subsequently attained so much notoriety in the annals both of Italy and Germany. They had risen in the quarrel that broke out between Conrad III., the founder of the Suabian line, and Henry, duke of Bavaria, who opposed his election—the friends of Henry being called Guelphs after one of his ancestors, while those of Conrad were called Ghibelines, from Wibelung, a town in which his ancestors had resided. The greatest of the Suabian princes was Frederick Barbarossa; and yet he had, on the one hand, to fight on equal terms with one of his own vassals, Henry the Lion, duke of Saxony, whose defection compelled him to conclude a disastrous peace in Italy, by which he acknowledged the independence of the free cities of that country; and, on the other, was obliged so far to humiliate himself before the Pope as to hold his stirrup and kiss his feet. The personal vigour of the man, however, neutralised considerably the disadvantages of his position. He swayed the diets as he pleased, and secured great deference from his vassal princes generally, particularly after Henry the Lion was banished and deprived of his estates. This increased the power of his son, Henry the Severe, to such an extent that he was only prevented from making the empire hereditary in his

Digitized by Google

family by the opposition of the Saxons. The last of the line was Frederick II., whose reign was particularly famous for the continuous struggle with the Holy See, known as the war of the Guelphs and Ghibelines—the latter name being adopted by the adherents of the emperor on account of his being a Suabian, while the former was taken up by the partisans of the Pope, merely as a distinguishing and hostile designation. The war both in Italy and Germany assumed a ferocious character. At first the emperor was everywhere successful, till fortune veered towards the close of his career. His defeat at Parma was followed by his death; and the glory of the empire died with him, till it was resuscitated by the house of Austria.

The greatest obstacles to the wellbeing of Germany up to this period were raised by her unfortunate connection with the spiritual Cæsar at Rome. The dual chiefs in Italy and Germany could never agree; the quarrel between them was constant; and, as Germany was at the same time exposed to attacks from the Slavonians and Huns, besides the internal disturbances created by her dukes and counts, she had scarcely rest enough to form herself into such a compact empire as she might otherwise have become. The quarrel with the Vatican was a perpetual see-saw. In the reigns of Otho the Great and Henry III. the Pope got worsted, and the Romans were obliged to bind themselves never to choose a Pope without the emperor's consent. The tables were turned in the reign of Henry IV., who was summoned by Hildebrand to appear before him to give an account of his loose life; and actually appeared at the gate of the Vatican barefooted, and stood there for three days, before Hilde-

Digitized by Google

brand would give him the absolution he begged for. So also Frederick Barbarossa had to hold the stirrup of Alexander III., and even gave offence to that haughty Pontiff from having got hold of the left stirrup, and not the right, for which mistake he was obliged to apologise. This pious insolence was maintained till the papal power began in the fourteenth century to decline; but even so late as Joseph I. (1705-11) we find the Pope able to rise up in arms against the imperial power, although he was not able to sustain that opposition long, and was terrified into submission. What gave the popes the advantage was the power of excommunication exercised by them, which enabled them to raise even the subjects of the emperor—nay, even his own children—against him; and, in a country where the nobles were constantly looking out for excuses to embarrass their sovereign, the confusion thus created was necessarily great.

The insecurity caused by these incessant troubles throughout the empire led, in the thirteenth century, the chief cities of the north to form themselves into a confederation, called the Hanseatic league, for the protection and expansion of commerce. The history of this league is singular, and will bear to be repeated. Commerce had been advancing steadily from the eleventh century; but, for the reasons stated, not so satisfactorily as in other countries, the chief drawback felt by the cities of the north being the piracies in the Baltic, which the empire was not able to put down. The cities therefore took the matter into their own hands, and joining together, soon rose to the dignity of a sovereign power. The chief emporiums of their commerce were London, Bergen in Norway, Novogorod in

Digitized by Google

Russia, and Bruges in Flanders, each of which commanded the market of a wide extent of territory around it, throughout the whole of which the league enjoyed an uncontrolled monopoly through the assistance of the governments concerned, which were largely bribed. It augmented its usefulness by undertaking the opening of mines, encouraging domestic manufactures, and clearing and cultivating forests, which were soon covered with hemp, flax, and corn. It also raised towns in the place of hamlets, gave birth to a wish among the people for the comforts and conveniences of life, and furthered the cause of civilisation and refinement in diverse ways, at the same time that it became strong enough to maintain an offensive war with Denmark, and was courted into alliance by the United Provinces, besides entering into treaties with other kings and states, and notably with the king of France. Eventually it grew corrupt from its very success. Being anxious to arrogate the whole trade of the north, it began to exercise that force and rapine which it had originally arisen to suppress. This necessarily created many enemies, who rose up in defence of their respective rights. The increasing civilisation of Europe created at the same time a diversion in the heart of the union itself. The cities of Holland and Friesland, though belonging to it, were the first to discover that independent action on their part would secure them greater advantages than the confederation was able to afford. They thereupon renounced the union, and the example was followed by other cities in time. In the seventeenth century only three cities kept up the union—namely, Lubeck, Hamburg, and Bremen—but without any particular advantage to themselves.

Digitized by Google

Another institution which came into prominence at about the same time with the league was the Teutonic order of Knighthood, called into existence by the king of Jerusalem, who, in consideration of the services rendered by the gentlemen-volunteers who accompanied Frederick Barbarossa to the Holy Land, formed them into an order of knighthood on the plan of the Knights Templar and the Knights of St John. This new institution was confirmed by the Pope, and Henry the Severe bestowed on it rights and lands. Returning from the Holy Land, the knights first took up arms against the Russians and other pagan races of the north, whom they kept at bay. In 1331 they conquered Prussia, or the land originally occupied by the Gothic tribe called Borussi, and at this time inhabited promiscuously by the Teutons, Wends, Letts, and Slavonians; and they ruled over it as vassals of the king of Poland. They were, like all knights of that age, monks and crusaders, and bound by the vows of poverty and celibacy. In 1525, Albert, margrave of Brandenburg, grand-master of the order, renouncing the priestly character, married and got children, and his knights following the example established the secular kingdom of Prussia, the grand-master becoming its first duke. The title of king was obtained later, by Frederick I., from the Emperor Leopold. These Teutonic knights were, in their day, like the knights of the other orders, very fond of tournaments and martial exercises. In Germany even ecclesiastics engaged in tourneys, which was rarely the case in any other country. But unfortunately, predatory incursions were confounded by the knights of Germany with deeds of valour, and the noblest warriors were not ashamed to indulge in open robbery. The

Digitized by Google

only object held in view by knighthood and chivalry in the country was to foster and preserve the military spirit of the nation, and that object was well attained. But the knight without reproach and shame was not a German specimen.

A third institution of the feudal times was the *Vehme Gerichte*, or secret tribunals of Germany, which bore for a long time a much-dreaded name. The feuds of the nobles and the lawlessness of the banditti maintained by them having filled the whole country with anarchy and violence, and there being no power in it able to check the reign of misrule and oppression, a little band of courageous and upright men took upon themselves the difficult task of finding an adequate remedy for the evils they laboured under, and with this view set up the secret tribunals, which are said to have existed before in the days of Charlemagne, but which had long fallen into disuse. The courts were unconstitutional, but held their sittings in the open air, and not under ground as the romances describe. Their officers were all initiated, a necessary precaution for secrecy; but they numbered among them some of the greatest chiefs of the land, and several of the emperors. Very great was the good achieved by them, particularly by the protection they afforded to the weak and the innocent. But they were continued too long, after the necessity for their existence had terminated; and, in their later stage, they not only ceased to be useful, but became absolutely injurious to the best interests of society, by contributing to prolong the reign of barbarism; though, taken altogether, it may still be conceded that they did greater good than harm to the poorer classes.

After the Suabian period Germany was for twenty

Digitized by Google

years without a head, the crown not being a coveted prize. A fit successor was at last found in Rodolph of Hapsburg, a Swiss, who commenced his reign by renouncing the supremacy hitherto claimed by the empire over Italy, France, and Catalonia, as having belonged to it from the time of Charlemagne, and sat down to suppress internal disorders, and to establish peace and tranquillity. To this end he destroyed all the fortresses which the nobles had erected for the purposes of plunder, and compelled them to submit their differences to arbitration. This revived Germany—which had become an extensive robbers' hold—from desolation; the peasant returned to his plough, and the merchant to occupations which had long ceased to be remunerative. Justly, therefore, was Rodolph held to be the second restorer of the empire—its greatest benefactor since the days of Charlemagne. For all that, he did not the less seek the aggrandisement of his own family; and, the rebellion of Ottocar, king of Bohemia, giving him the disposal of the duchies of Austria, Styria, and Carniola, he bestowed them, with the consent of the diet, on his son, whereby the house of Austria was founded. In the reigns that followed, the hobby of conquering Italy was revived, and the struggles with the Pope were renewed. In the reign of Ludovic IV. the diet took the bold step of publishing the Pragmatic Sanction, which expressly denied the right of the Pope to interfere in the election of emperors; and in that of Charles IV. was promulgated the Golden Bull, so called from the golden seal attached to the document, which fixed the number and defined the prerogatives of the electors. Originally the election was confined to the five principal nations of Germany —the Franks, Suabians, Bavarians, Saxons, and

Digitized by Google

Thuringians—each of which constituted a duchy. To these the Lorrainers were afterwards added, but they never acquired equal influence with the rest, on account of their fluctuating relations between Germany and France. In later times the number of principalities and seigniories was greatly increased, till the election came to be made by all the princes of the empire assembled together, which necessarily gave rise to immense confusion, corruption, and extraneous interference. The electors were therefore now induced to transfer their powers to seven chiefs—a mystic number, selected for representing the seven candlesticks of the Apocalypse, and the seven gifts of the Holy Ghost. Three of these chiefs were ecclesiastics — namely, the bishops of Maintz, Treves, and Cologne; while the other four were secular princes—namely, the King of Bohemia, the Count Palatinate of the Rhine, the Duke of Saxony, and the Margrave of Brandenburg. The number was afterwards increased to eight, and eventually to nine. Besides this body, a wider council embraced all the chiefs entitled to sit on the diets or general assemblies with a deliberative and decisive voice, and included all the dukes, margraves, landgraves, burgraves, and counts, together with all the archbishops, bishops, and abbots. To some imperial towns the same privilege was also conceded, with others, such as the regulation of the forms of government within their respective jurisdictions, and the enactment of laws for their own government; but to the people of the country at large no similar concessions were ever made.

On the election of Rodolph the possessions of the house of Hapsburg in Switzerland were united to the empire, and became part and parcel of the

Digitized by Google

dominion of Austria. The Swiss, as ever, were extremely jealous of their liberty, but remained perfectly submissive so long as no attempts were made to reduce them to servitude. Albert I., the son of Rodolph, irritated them by endeavouring to force on them all the claims of an absolute sovereign, which they would not allow; and when the governors appointed by him attempted to domineer over them unduly, they rose up in arms against them, and expelled them. The story of Tell is well known; he would not bow to Geisler's hat, and was compelled to shoot at an apple placed on his son's head. The mark was hit, and Tell liberated; but the act aroused the indignation of the men of three cantons —Uri, Schwartz, and Unterwalden—who contemptuously renounced the authority of Austria. The battle of Morgarten, the Marathon of Switzerland, was fought in 1315, and secured the independence of that country. Subsequently, France and Burgundy attempted to coerce her, but without success. The house of Austria sold the greater part of its possessions in Switzerland to the cantons of Zurich and Berne.

In the Germanic empire the house of Austria became dominant by the election of Albert II. to the throne, in 1437; and from that time to 1805, when the constitution of Germany was subverted by Napoleon I., the emperor was always chosen from that line. This preference was secured by the great possessions and power already acquired by the house of Austria, which, by the marriage of Albert with the heiress of Sigismund, had united with itself the thrones of Hungary and Bohemia. Hungary was the country of the Huns, who had constantly been fighting with the Germans, even

Digitized by Google

after they were well defeated and confined for the time within their own territory by Otho the Great. They continued to be ruled by their own sovereigns till the union of their country with Austria after the death of Sigismund, though a permanent union was not effected till long after, in the reign of Ferdinand I. Bohemia, the country of the Boii, was also subdued by the Emperor Otho, but continued to be ruled over by its own dukes, who were, however, never wholly independent, being generally subject to Poland or Hungary, until the final union of the country with Austria, after the death of Sigismund. The possessions thus acquired by Austria were not very easy burthens, as they always gave her much trouble; but they also gave her a preponderance of power in the empire which was not possessed at this time by any other state. As was mentioned by the Bishop of Maintz at the election of Charles VI., the empire was a wife of high family without fortune, that had to be maintained at great expense, which the powerful house of Austria alone could afford. We read that at one time the empire was offered to an English sovereign, Edward III., by whom it was judiciously refused.

The reign of Maximilian I. commenced at about the time when the middle ages were terminated. Though France and Germany were hostile by their very position, no complications of any magnitude had arisen between them up to this time. The marriage of Maximilian with the daughter of Charles of Burgundy first brought the two countries into direct collision. France seized all the provinces of Charles immediately after his death, excepting the Netherlands, which were acquired by Germany; but Maximilian regarded his son Philip as the rightful

Digitized by Google

heir, not only of the Netherlands, but also of the states which France had annexed. The complication became greater from the subsequent marriage of Philip with the Infanta of Spain, as both France and Spain were contending for the throne of Naples; but Maximilian was not strong enough to oppose the French king effectually, and the fury of the contention was staved off to a later date. In the reign of Maximilian the diet established a perpetual peace in Germany by adopting vigorous measures for the suppression of private warfare, and by providing a paramount court of justice. The empire, hitherto divided into six circles, was now redistributed into ten, by the addition of new circles for Austria, the Netherlands, the Lower Rhine, and Upper Saxony; the public law was also better defined; the administration of justice reformed; and domestic wars between the cities and principalities were put a stop to by the imposition of the severest penalties. Maximilian was the first also to establish a standing army; and he so improved the artillery that he was called its founder.

The greatest sovereign of the house of Austria was Charles V., the son of Philip, who, besides his German possessions, including the Netherlands, was also king of Spain, Naples, Sicily, and the New World, by right of his wife, which made him the most powerful monarch of his day in Europe. His election, as has been stated in the preceding chapter, was contested by Francis, king of France, whose defeat made him an enemy, and led to unceasing contests, while Charles was also much troubled on the confines of Hungary by the enemy then most dreaded in Europe, the Turks. These difficulties were rendered interminable by the coalition of other

Digitized by Google

states, and by the religious movement which was spreading steadily all over Europe. The age of Charles was the age of the Reformation. The clergy in Germany had long been disliked and hated. They had ample privileges and immunities which they had abused; and, since they were relieved from the depredations of the secular nobles, they had become more rapacious and tyrannical in the enforcement of their ecclesiastical demands. Their lives, moreover, were immoral, their imposture gross, and the sale of indulgences had made them thoroughly despised. The wish for a reformation had thus already arisen; and this not only in Germany, but also in Italy, where the schisms in the popedom had destroyed much of the reverence that had been paid to the Church. The subject had, moreover, been rendered illustrious by the poetry of Dante and Petrarch; the teachings of Luther were therefore warmly received, even from the outset. The same lessons were also taught by Zwingle in Switzerland, and were equally well received there; and they rapidly spread into France, the Low Countries, and England, where the ground had been prepared for their reception by the instructions of Wicliffe and his disciples. Charles detested the new doctrines. They were condemned by a diet assembled by him at Spires, against which decision the Elector of Saxony and other German princes, and the deputies of fourteen cities, protested, whence the name of Protestants was derived. A civil war followed: the emperor was obliged to temporise; for he needed the assistance of all his subjects to get over his frontier difficulties. The liberty of conscience they contended for was therefore allowed; and this enabled him to tide over the imminent danger of the

Digitized by Google

Turkish invasion, which was repelled. After that, diet after diet, and colloquy after colloquy, were held, in the vain hope of bringing back the dissidents to the bosom of the Church; and eventually, unable to suppress his real designs any further, Charles attempted to enforce them. In this he was unsuccessful. The Lutheran princes were equal to the occasion, and, with the aid of Francis, were able to maintain their convictions, and secure the religious peace they sought for, Charles being compelled to permit the free exercise of the Protestant religion in the independent cities and principalities of the empire. This produced a revolution, which led to many changes, including a definition of the political constitution of the country. Intellect was also liberated, and religion and morals purified. But the spirit of Charles was embittered by the opposition he received; and after a vain attempt to elevate his son to the throne, he abdicated it to his brother Ferdinand, who was elected to succeed him.

The Emperor Mathias, who succeeded in 1612, having undertaken to repress the Protestants, gave rise to the Thirty Years' War,—one of the most disastrous that ever afflicted any country, and which shook Europe to its very extremities. The Protestants were assisted by Gustavus Adolphus, king of Sweden, the greatest captain of the age, and the professed enemy of the house of Austria. They were also assisted by the kings of Denmark and France. The death of Gustavus at the battle of Lützen cast a temporary gloom over their affairs; but the Swedish generals who succeeded him ably sustained the glory acquired by their king; and the French, under Turenne, were equally successful. This led to the peace of Westphalia, by which the

Digitized by Google

Protestants and Catholics were for the first time placed on an equal footing. The limits of the imperial, electoral, aristocratic, and municipal powers were also definitely prescribed, and a stable foundation laid for the international law of Europe. Germany was, by this agreement, dismembered of the Rhine provinces, which France, in protection of Protestant interests, had occupied, and was permitted to retain, gaining thereby a facility of passage both into Germany and Italy; Sweden obtained a footing on German soil, which gave her the command of the Elbe and the Oder, and three votes at the diet; Switzerland was admitted to be free; while the different states composing the empire were gratified by a show of independence, which virtually made them weaker, by depriving them of the advantages of concord and union, and led to the smaller states being made dependent on the larger states, and to the subjugation of most of the imperial towns, once the chief seats of German wealth, prosperity, and commerce. From this time may be dated the rapid decline of the empire as a confederate body. Not only did it disable Germany from withstanding any of the great powers without; it also made her subject to the domination of the great states within. The original phantom of a Holy Roman Empire, with its dual chiefs—spiritual and temporal—was now virtually dissolved; the empire was split up into parts, and those parts began very soon to quarrel among themselves for supremacy over each other; the right of the strongest was everywhere predominant; and everywhere the people were oppressed and reduced.

In the reign of Leopold I., Hungary was in rebellion, and the Turks, assisted by the insurgents and encouraged by France, laid siege to Vienna.

Digitized by Google

They were defeated and driven away by Sobieski, king of Poland; after which Leopold was able to reduce Hungary, and then to join the confederacy formed for the purpose of restraining the encroachments of France. Like Francis I., Louis XIV. had also aspired to the imperial throne, which his ministers had claimed on his behalf during his minority, on the death of Ferdinand III. Not succeeding in obtaining it, Louis indulged, throughout the whole of his reign, in a series of the most unprovoked, wanton, and unprincipled aggressions on Germany, till a sense of common danger roused other countries —Holland, Denmark, Sweden, and England — to combine against him, he being eventually humbled by the successes of Marlborough. Germany was generally the scene of action, and suffered considerably on that account; but what it suffered more from was the constant endeavours which were now made by the emperors to extend the prerogatives of the Crown. Ever since the peace of Westphalia the house of Austria has been bent upon extinguishing the liberties of the empire, and making the imperial crown hereditary in itself; and the disturbances created by Louis XIV. were so far beneficial to Germany that they prevented the emperors from completing the mischief they designed.

In 1741, Maria Theresa, the daughter of Charles VI., succeeded to the possessions of the house of Austria, under the terms of an edict previously passed by the diet at the instance of her father, which most of the powers of Europe had promised to defend. Many of those powers, however, when the occasion arose, thought it particularly favourable for dismembering Austria of her vast possessions. The king of Prussia demanded Silesia; the king of

Digitized by Google

Poland, Austria; the Elector of Bavaria, Bohemia; and the king of Sardinia, Milan. The crisis was hurried by the Elector of Bavaria, who, entering Upper Austria, took Lintz, and menaced Vienna. The terrified queen fled thereupon to Hungary, with her infant in her arms, and all Hungary rose up to a man to defend her cause. The grateful tears of Maria increased the enthusiasm of the Hungarians, and made them invincible; she received some assistance also from England; and the chivalrous bandits, who had expected to divide her dominions among themselves, were first astonished at the opposition improvised, and then content to draw back, which led to the husband of Maria being elected emperor of Germany.

The great disturber of the peace of Europe at this era was Frederick II., king of Prussia, well known as Frederick the Great. The secular kingdom of Prussia having been established by Albert of Brandenburg, the Prussians joined the Protestant cause, and began to develop themselves, intellectually and materially, as that cause was expanded. The temporal Cæsar opposed this more vigorously than the spiritual Cæsar; hard blows were exchanged; but the final result was the acquisition of more and more of German soil by the new state. In the reign of Leopold I. Prussia was raised to the dignity of a kingdom, the emperor having found a cordial supporter of his power in Frederick I. The second king, Frederick William I., amassed a considerable treasure, and formed an army of 60,000 men; and these resources enabled his successor, Frederick II., considerably to enlarge his dominions. From the queen of Hungary he obtained Silesia and Glatz; but what he gained most from was the partition of

Digitized by Google

Poland, of which he was the most active agent, and which was effected in concert with Russia and Austria, at a time when Poland was torn by intestine feuds and sunk in anarchy. Up to this time the Poles had done faithful service in Europe. As the French withstood the encroachments of Mahomedanism from the south, so did the Austrians and the Poles repel its encroachments from the east, after the reduction of the Eastern Empire by the Turks. But unfortunately, since 1542 the kingly office in Poland had been made elective, which gave rise to violent factions in the state, and compelled appeals to foreign powers, which excited their cupidity. A disputed election at last became the pretext for the three great neighbouring powers to interfere, and they decided amongst themselves that the best remedy for the distemper which caused so much uneasiness was to appropriate the kingdom to themselves, which Europe permitted without demur. The partition designed in 1772 was not completed till 1795. Frederick II. died intermediately, in 1786, after having added a population of two millions to his paternal inheritance, doubled the revenues of his country, and formed an army of 200,000 men—the best-disciplined force in Europe. The power thus consolidated acted from this time as a counterpoise to the house of Austria in the affairs of Germany, which eventually changed their position.

The wars of the French Revolution were commenced in 1792, as the inevitable sequel of the partition of Poland, which had compelled the Prussian and Austrian forces to remain inactive when their joint action in the Netherlands would have nipped the revolutionary movement in the bud. The

Digitized by Google

emperor of Germany had a personal interest in the contest that broke out, as being the brother of the unfortunate Marie Antoinette who was guillotined, and the conflicts in Germany were necessarily numerous. These were ended for a time by the peace of Campo Formio, by which Austria was obliged to cede Italy and the Netherlands; but hostilities were soon after renewed under Napoleon I., and Vienna being taken and occupied, the German constitution was, by the treaty of Presburg (1805), subverted, the emperor becoming emperor of Austria only, and not of Germany, while the other German states were formed into a separate association called the Confederation of the Rhine, of which Bonaparte declared himself to be the Protector.

The triumphs of Bonaparte being abruptly terminated, the Confederation of the Rhine was replaced by an independent confederation in 1815, a permanent diet of plenipotentiaries from the states retaining sovereign power being established at Frankfort on the Maine. The states represented were thirty-one in number; but as some of the smaller ones voted jointly with others, the total number of representatives was seventeen—namely, from (1) Austria; (2) Prussia; (3) Bavaria; (4) Saxony; (5) Hanover; (6) Wurtemburg; (7) Baden; (8) Electorate of Hesse; (9) Grand Ducal Hesse; (10) Denmark, for Holstein and Lauenburg; (11) Netherlands, for Limburg and Luxemburg; (12) Saxe Meiningen, Saxe Coburg Gotha, and Saxe Altenburg; (13) Brunswick and Nassau; (14) the two Mecklenburgs; (15) the two Schwarzburgs; (16) Lichtenstein, Reuss, Schaumburg Lippe, Lippe Detwold, and Hesse Homburg; and (17) the free cities of Frankfort, Lubeck, Bremen, and Hamburg.

Digitized by Google

In theory the votes were equal, and the jurisdiction of the diet extensive; but, as the greater powers jealously guarded their exclusive rights, the actual character of the diet was rather that of a court of registration than of an independent body exercising sovereign powers. For the preservation of internal tranquillity the diet had extensive authority, but that authority was effectual only when enforced against secondary states. As a league for enforcing respect from other nations, the confederation had a large army, but not the necessary unity for effective action; and generally, in all matters internal and external, its proceedings were marked with activity only when the great powers—Austria and Prussia—were agreed.

Unfortunately that agreement was very rare. The precedency of Austria had been acquired with the assent of the confederated states, and under the sanction of the great powers at the Congress of Vienna, by which the public law of Europe was re-established. But Prussia was not reconciled to it; her geographical position made her interests identical with those of the other German states; the interests of Austria were not the same with them to the same extent. It was determined, therefore, by Prussia to throw Austria overboard, exclude her from taking part in German affairs, and remodel the confederation so as to leave the control of the armed force of Germany entirely in Prussia's hands. Nothing short of this would have given Prussia the lead; and she was determined to be satisfied with nothing less. All the measures taken by Prussia for the attainment of this purpose will not bear examination; but the end held in view was accomplished. Ever since Jena and Wagram the neces-

Digitized by Google

sity for a united Germany had been fully established. All the arrangements made since then had also established that it was not possible for Prussia and Austria to pull together in one direction. The first position conceded to Austria she was unable to justify; the Germanic leaven in her was too weak to enable her to accomplish the needful union; she had neither the military, nor the political, nor the moral strength required for it. Prussia felt that it was now her turn to try; and, as the thing had to be done, she cut off Austria summarily as an unnecessary excrescence, and became herself the nucleus of that united Germany that was wanted.

The federal execution in Holstein was undertaken in deference to the public opinion of Germany, to redress German wrongs; and only proposed to maintain the rights of Germany in the duchies. But the territorial acquisition secured on that plea was for Prussian aggrandisement alone, and Austria was made to aid in gaining it only with a view to divide the odium of the robbery. That done, the pretext for quarrel between the two rival powers was not long to find, and the good fight was fought, and Austria victimised. By the treaty of Prague (1866) the dissolution of the German confederation was completed and recognised, and Austria engaged to abstain from interference in the reconstruction of Germany, which was effected in the way Prussia wanted. The Elbe duchies were appropriated by Prussia, and a good many of the hitherto independent states were absorbed; while all the states left intact were made to acknowledge her supremacy. This freed Austria of all her German ties, and ought to enable her to consolidate her yet extensive dominions. We have not noticed the insurrections in

Digitized by Google

Austria and Hungary in 1848 and 1849, which were only put down with the assistance of the Russians. The rule of Austria does not rest on a basis of common nationality, and political commotions of the sort were inevitable under the system of absolutism and centralisation which Austria had hitherto maintained. Great efforts have since been made to re-erect the edifice, and the Hungarians, not ceasing to be troublesome, have been conciliated by considerable concessions. But the only foundation on which a confederated constitution would stand perfectly safe—namely, the concession of equal rights and privileges to all parties—remains yet to be tried.

The war of Prussia with Austria settled the nucleus of the German nation; a war with France was necessary to seal its federation. Prussia had armed herself for this; but it would not be true to say that she forced the war on France, though there is no doubt that she has since been trying very hard to get up a second war. The inconsiderate levity of France hurried on the first war, which she ought to have carefully guarded against; and, after having defeated two Cæsars, Prussia took up the imperial crown and put it on. This crown is no longer dual: with Austria it has no further concern; still less with the Vatican, though the Pope still affects to claim his original jurisdiction over the Western Empire. He continues to interfere with the administration of the country, so far as Catholicism is concerned, for he does not know, he says, when his right to do so ceased. The answer is, that Germany, as now constituted, is not what Germany was in the past. It is a united Germany now in every sense of the word, recognising no ruler out of Germany, no alien jurisdiction—spiritual or temporal—over any

Digitized by Google

spot of German land. Germany now is secular only, national, and independent.

But will this unity last? The emperor of Austria is not reconciled to it; the French nation do not admit the contest with them to have finally terminated; and Prussia herself seems to think that her only protection lies in the military system she has inaugurated—a system which holds out a dangerous precedent to Europe, but which has virtually existed in Prussia from the time of Frederick the Great. By it every man in the country is a soldier, the entire male population of it being bound to personal military service. But can an army thus raised, which must be irresistible for purposes of national defence, be maintained at all times without telling injuriously on the people? The answer is not a difficult one to find; it has, in fact, been given, since no nation in Europe has yet ventured to adopt the system in its integrity. The cost of personal freedom and individual independence involved in it, would deteriorate the best and most flourishing nation in the world; it has deteriorated Prussia so far that she has not grown to the extent she might have done. Even France has colonies, but Prussia has none. It is certain that civilisation in Germany will be thrown back by it half a century at least; and if Germany can afford that, it is only because her population at this moment—of Prussia particularly—is more highly educated than that of any other country in Europe. But, even with that advantage, Germany will not, and cannot, long get on successfully with the clog she has placed upon herself. Providence did not mean men to be soldiers only; the human race has a higher destiny; and it requires no prophet to fore-

Digitized by Google

tell that her military organisation will be Germany's ruin.

Throughout Germany the belief is universal that there will be another war; and that before peace is assured France must be ground again—finer than before. This Prussia is doubtless able to achieve under the system she has chosen, since no country in the world can bring such a mass of soldiers on the field at once, in case of war, as she can. Her army will never fight at a distance; but with her next-door neighbour it must necessarily be absolutely irresistible. France, on her part, doubtless nourishes a desire of vengeance; she did so against England after the battle of Waterloo. But, as then, she is not now, and for a long time to come will not be by herself able, to give effect to her wishes. Besides, Germany has been wise in her generation. She has rectified her frontier by resuming territories —Alsace and Lorraine—which belonged to her of old, and were forcibly taken away from her by Louis XIV.; and these, properly guarded, will not leave the egress from France so easy as it was heretofore. All the hopes of France of vengeance, must depend, therefore, in a coalition with other powers—with Austria, England, and Russia. England is too wise to intermeddle in matters that do not concern her personally, and is not likely besides to do so against Germany, since in the whole history of Europe they have never been at war with each other. Russia, also, will not intermeddle, because her hands are full with her own affairs. Austria, without the conjunction of England or Russia, will never come out. It will be a long time, therefore, before France is able to secure that co-operation without which she can have no chance of success.

Digitized by Google

Why, then, should Germany continue to be so strongly armed, and by her attitude force her neighbours to maintain ruinous forces? Is the equipage of a large army as fascinating to her as the equipage of horses and hounds to the nobility of England? This at least is certain, that the game is a dangerous one even for her to play at. It is no secret now, that the Prussian scheme of armament is pressing very hard on the Prussian people, disarranging the love of home, on which domestic and national happiness depend, and perniciously affecting the minds of men by giving birth to democratical feelings of the fiercest and most subversive kind. The reign of Louis XIV. in France virtually gave rise to the Revolution; and in Germany the disposition to accept a military rule is not very cordial. The ferment of patriotic excitement is subsiding rapidly, and other dreams of the nation than those of military supremacy will have to be realised, or the volcano will burst. A tempest may yet arise within Prussia which neither Bismarck nor Moltke will be able to allay. Empires based on military glory are always subject to suicidal tendencies, and destroy themselves.

The early history of Germany is simply the history of a few great figures—known as emperors and popes, dukes, margraves, and counts; very little being known of the masses beyond this, that they ate, drank, married, settled, fought, and died, as large masses of human beings are doing at this moment of whom history will say nothing in the future. At the outset the freemen would not even acknowledge kings; but, under the names of counts and dukes, the right of governing them was soon acquired, and very soon abused. At no period and

Digitized by Google

under no dynasty were they admitted to a share in the administration, except in the case of the independent cities, which, banding together, formed themselves into a power that forced respect. The general feature of the administration all over the country was an aristocratic rule—a rule of robbers who partitioned the empire among themselves, exercising their sway under the nominal supremacy of a chief whom they set up, but who in rare instances only was able to control their movements with success. Constant wars kept these unruly spirits perpetually engaged. The Hungarians, Bohemians, Poles, and Turks gave them ample work without; and, when not so engaged, they were sure to be fighting with each other within. The character of a fighting race was always retained.

The temporal Cæsar, as emperor of the West, had an indirect jurisdiction over all the outside kingdoms of the Christian commonwealth; but this, of course, was an authority that could not be, and was not attempted to be, exercised. He reigned with vigour who was able to control his own diet and check the perpetual disorders created by his own nobles. As in France at the outset, so in Germany almost at all times, the kingdom was only an aggregation of petty sovereignties, not a homogeneous whole, of which the real rulers were the dukes and counts; while every gentleman who held a fief or knightly tenure under them arrogated a legal right to pillage, which neither serf nor sovereign was able to resist. The aristocracy of the country was of two kinds—one immediately subject to the jurisdiction of the empire, the other subject also to the jurisdiction of the immediate ruler of the principality or dukedom to which the noblemen be-

Digitized by Google

longed. A united aristocracy was never known; the subordinate chiefs of distinct states, when in an unreasonable temper, scarcely submitted to imperial control; and many were the emperors who were obliged to rule even over their vassals and sub-vassals by conciliation, wholly unaccompanied by force.

Another great power in the state was the clergy, ostensibly representing the spiritual Cæsar, but oftener arrayed against him than on his side. Barring the opposition they received from the secular nobles, these also had everything their own way. They were represented in the diet, and that gave them a consequence which was abused. The spiritual labour devolving on them was perfunctorily performed, though no country was plunged in greater darkness than Germany, or stood in greater need of the self-denying and magnanimous virtues to civilise her. They liked the good things of the earth better than the saving of souls, and their demands on the people were not less rapacious than those of the nobles, whereby the reign of anarchy, confusion, and ignorance was prolonged. The disputes between them and the people were constant and interminable; and their profligacy of life led to that early call for a reformation which, in the case of the Hussites, united the two questions of religious abuses and serfdom, and had to be put down by a combination of spiritual and secular arms.

All the progress that Germany has since made has been effected after the days of the Reformation, and mainly under the direction of Prussia. The foundations of liberal studies were, it is true, laid in the schools attached to the cathedrals and monasteries established by the Anglo-Saxon missionaries

Digitized by Google

at the outset; but the studies there prosecuted rarely included anything beyond the elements of theology, history, and the canon law, with a moderate share of arithmetic, geometry, and natural philosophy, even these being confined within the limits of the cloisters. Greater proficiency was attained by the clergy in the art of magic—especially in the thirteenth century, when the rage for magic was at its height. It was reserved for Prussia, after she became a great state, to free letters and science from spiritual censorship, and induce them to exert their own strength; after which the German mind was soon found to be as well fitted as any other for scientific and philosophical studies, which from the outset had been carefully eschewed. The progress since made in the sciences and arts has been very great: in philosophy the reputation gained by the German is second to none; he has also made many ingenious improvements in mechanics. The country that has produced Klopstock, Kant, Herder, Humboldt, Lessing, Hegel, Goethe, and Schiller, has well vindicated her position in the foremost rank of education and intelligence. But in manufactures and commerce her progress has not been equally successful, nor will it be so till her political system is amended. In manufactures especially, Germany stood foremost before the Thirty Years' War, which dispersed her citizens all over Europe. The restoration to that pre-eminence ought to be a higher object to her than the armed superiority now aspired to. Referring to her own history, we find that in the wars with Napoleon I. the Germans suffered so long only as the people would not fight with a heart for a mere choice of despots; but that the tables were turned in 1813, when the youth of Germany

Digitized by Google

burned with patriotic ardour to earn liberal institutions for their country by the expulsion of the French. The same aspiration for liberal institutions is exhibiting itself again, and no attitude which is not favourable to it can endure. At present the government is very strong—stronger than the people. This feature must be altered, or very much modified. As the people get stronger—stronger than the government set over them—will the commercial and industrial spirit of the nation be developed. The constitution of the country must also be reorganised. The farce of popular representation and self-government exists; but the sham which the Reichstag represents will never meet the requirements of the age, and the requirements of Germany will soon make themselves to be understood.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

RUSSIA.

Russia has been correctly designated an anomalous member of the European confederacy, being quite as irregular in her constituency, in comparison with other states, as Turkey herself. The fact is, she is an Asiatic power, recently, and almost forcibly, Europeanised, and has not yet fully benefited by the metamorphosis. With one foot in Europe and the other in Asia, she partakes of the character of both continents, and the incongruities arising therefrom have not yet been sufficiently harmonised to be easily skipped over. The barbarism of her people is as remarkable as the immensity of her dominion, and these two peculiarities together impart to her features a savage majesty special to herself. At first sight she appears to be more rich and more powerful than all the sister states whose acquaintance she has forcibly cultivated. But on more intimate acquaintance with her she betrays greater deficiencies than any of them, and the marks of her fragility become perceptible in the very vastness of her territory. No empire can be more subject to the caprices of fortune than hers is. To-day it extends from the Baltic to the Pacific, from the

Digitized by Google

Frozen Ocean to Tartary and the Crimea: but there is nothing to prevent its splitting up to-morrow into as many subdivisions as there are nations in it differing from each other in habits, manners, and language; and this will inevitably happen when all those nations are sufficiently educated to be able to understand their rights. The past history of this vast empire is very sad and gloomy; its present history is scarcely much brighter; and it seems that to retain its integrity it is essential that it should also retain its sadness, gloom, and barbarism. No page in the annals of Russia exhibits anything that is bright, heroic, or ennobling, except that which records the recent liberation of the serfs. To what that may eventually lead is yet very uncertain.

The most anciently known inhabitants of Russia were the Scythians in the south, the Slavonians in the centre, and the Finns in the north. Of their earliest source no traditions exist. It is believed that the inundations from Central Asia were constant; but they do not appear to have ever penetrated in a northern direction beyond Kief, which was built by the Slavonians of the Danube on their being beaten back by the Bulgars. A Slavonian colony also founded the city of Novogorod further to the north. But beyond that, the attacks and alliances were always from and with the nations of the West—namely, the Varangians, northmen, or Scandinavians, those hardy pirates who by their persistence and valour overturned such a large portion of Europe. The government of Russia was at this time a republic, which was not wanting in strength; its headquarters being at Novogorod, which was so formidable to its neighbours that it was a common saying

Digitized by Google

among them, "Who can dare to attack God, or Novogorod the Great!" This power implies conquest; and it is known that all the nations from Lithuania to the Oural mountains, and from the Rostaf to the White Sea, were governed by the Novogorodians as tributaries. Their commerce, also, was extensive, extending to Constantinople in one direction, and Persia and India in another.

The trade through the Baltic having been molested by the Varangians, hostilities broke out between them and the Novogorodians, in which the latter were worsted. The enfeeblement of the state followed; and, becoming unable to retain their independence, the Novogorodians invited the Varangians to come and fight their battles for them. It is the old story of Hengist and Horsa again. The invitation was accepted by three brothers, of whom Rurik was the eldest. Having established themselves in Novogorod as auxiliaries, they were not slow in making themselves masters of it. The republic was overturned in 862, and a grand-principality established, of which Rurik was the chief. Shortly afterwards, Oskold and Dir, two other Varangian chiefs, founded a separate principality in Kief; and, in the tenth century, one Regnvold held distinct sway at Polotsk. The original republic was thus in all directions completely overturned.

The dominion founded by Rurik was rapidly and prodigiously enlarged by his successor Oleg, who acted as regent during the minority of Rurik's son, Igor, and who by craft and perfidy acquired the possession of Kief, to which the seat of the grand-principality was removed. Acting from this base, Oleg was able to secure a large part of the territory now known as European Russia; and, not con-

Digitized by Google

tent with that, he descended the Dnieper, at the head of 80,000 men, devastating the Greek empire, even to the walls of Constantinople, to which Oleg was as formidable in his day as any of his successors have ever been. His warriors returned to their country laden with gold, rich stuffs, and wines; and, buying peace on such terms, the Greeks held out a tempting bait to the barbarians, which induced them to repeat their attacks on the Greek empire frequently. The tact of Oleg was displayed in securing the good-will of the tribes and races he vanquished; and this enabled him to collect under his banners vast hordes of different races, which made his arms irresistible.

The death of Oleg restored Igor to the principality founded by his father; but he had to encounter on his accession an insurrection of the peoples recently conquered by Oleg, of whom one, the Petcheneguans, gave him much trouble. The revolt was eventually put down, after which Igor devastated Paphlagonia, Pontus, and Bithynia, and then turned his arms against the Drevalians, by whom he and his companions were massacred. This reverse was fully avenged by his wife Olga, who acted as regent during the minority of her son Sviatoslaf, and who laid the country of the Drevalians waste with an atrocious barbarity, instances similar to which are only to be found in Russian history. She then went to Constantinople to be baptised! being the first Christian in Russia who exercised sovereign power. Her government is well spoken of; she divided Russia into administrative districts; and the kindness of her rule filled the hearts of her people with affection and respect, by which means she obtained the name of St Olga after death. It is said that her

Digitized by Google

conversion and visit to the capital of the Greek empire were prompted by a desire to consolidate commercial relations with the countries of the south; so that, male or female, the sovereigns of Russia have always had an eye on the tempting wealth of Turkey, and the commercial and political ascendancy to be gained by dealing with her.

Sviatoslaf, the son of Igor, was regarded as the Achilles of his age; a rough and impetuous soldier, who rejected the pious exhortations of his mother that he should become a Christian, by the characteristic question whether she wished him to be a laughing-stock to his friends. His life was simple as that of a Tartar. He had no other habitation than the camp, lay on the bare ground or on a piece of coarse felt—the saddle of his horse serving for a pillow—and fed on the flesh of horses. His troops, devoted to him, were similarly inured, and he was thereby enabled to carry war to great distances without embarrassment. He conquered all the country between the Tanais and the Borysthenes, the Chersonesus Taurica and Hungary. As distinguished from the treachery of the times and the people he reigned over, he never attacked his enemies without a previous declaration of war. The greatest defeat he sustained was from the Greeks, by whom he was expelled from Bulgaria; and, the Petcheneguans falling on him in his retreat, he and his small band were killed, his skull, surmounted by a golden circlet, being used as a drinking-cup by the chief by whom he was slain. It was in the reign of Sviatoslaf that territories began to be given away in Russia as private appanages to princes of the blood—a pernicious custom, which in a short

Digitized by Google

time broke up the principality into a lot of little states, and weakened the unity of the Russian power.

The first sovereign of the empire who adopted and solidly established Christianity in Russia was Vladimir the Great, who also became a saint. He had six wives and eight hundred concubines, and his character was so infamous that no maid or matron of any attraction who came to his notice was safe from his lust. The prowess of his arm was also great, and he forced back to obedience all the tributary nations that had revolted after the death of Sviatoslaf, at the same time that he brought other nations under his yoke. The power and fame of the man induced four religions to contend for his conversion —namely, Mahomedanism, Judaism, Catholicism, and the Greek Church. The example of his ancestress, Olga, led him to prefer the last; but before receiving the rite of baptism he made a preparatory raid on Greece, the rite being concluded by a new marriage, with Anna, the sister of the Greek sovereign, on which the conquests made by Vladimir were restored. After this all the idols of Russia were thrown into the Dnieper; but beyond that there was no religious persecution, and the wish for conversion among the Russians was spontaneous. The people were in too low a state of civilisation to care for any religion much; they had no objection to any form of worship that pleased their sovereign; and, when a proclamation was issued asking the inhabitants of Kief to repair to the banks of the river to be baptised, the order was promptly and joyfully obeyed.

The first legislator of Russia was Yaroslaf, a son of Vladimir, who commenced by revolting against

Digitized by Google

his father, and finished by conquering his brothers, after which he became a zealous promoter of Christianity. He was the first to disseminate instruction and civilisation broadcast throughout his dominions, to establish schools, and to wage a continuous war against sorcery and superstition. He also had the Bible translated into Slavonian—a vast undertaking for the age; and he gave Russia a code of laws for which he was principally famous, though all he did appears to have been confined to the collection, collation, and registration of the laws and customs which already existed, and were sanctioned by time, removing or disentangling therefrom the complications which had crept in. Unfortunately, he continued the practice of dismembering the empire by parcelling it out among the princes of the blood. The defect in the primitive constitution was thus in a manner legally perpetuated, which at a later date so weakened Russia as to make her an easy prey to the Tartars. Yaroslaf was nevertheless one of the greatest princes of his dynasty; and to him and Vladimir belong the credit of having made Russia European, as well by their conquests towards the west, the religion they introduced in it, the efforts they made to civilise the people, and their alliances. The daughters-in-law of Yaroslaf were Greek, German, and English princesses; his sister was queen of Poland; his daughters were queens of Norway, Hungary, and France.

The whole authentic history of Russia embraces a period of less than one thousand years, which is divided into five great epochs, the first extending from 862 to 1054, which was the period of establishment and consolidation; the second extending from 1055 to 1237, which comprised the period of dis-

Digitized by Google

sensions and anarchy; the third, from 1238 to 1461, which is known as the period of complete slavery; the fourth extending from 1462 to 1612, generally recognised as the period of deliverance and despotism; and the last, from 1613 up to the present time, which may be called the period of European civilisation. A minute examination of all these epochs is not necessary. The first period was one of progress. The soldier-kings who commenced it exhibited, in spite of their ferocity and barbarism, traits of greatness deserving attention. A paramount throne, a religion, a code of laws, were all established by them. But the second period was one of relapse, and is characterised mainly by an unparalleled amount of languor and listlessness, diversified by bloody struggles and horrible catastrophes, a very general allusion to which will be sufficient. The civilisation that Russia had attained was surrounded on all sides by the densest barbarism. The civil commotions that followed the absence of the genius and spirit of the first rulers weakened the garrison within, at the same time that it strengthened the enemy without. The outer barbarism, therefore, was triumphant within a very short time. Kief, softened by the manners of Byzantium, ceased to instruct; the influence and energy of Central Russia, still pagan and barbarous, was renewed. The civil wars were accompanied by innumerable assassinations; and the confusion was augmented by the attacks of the Poles, Hungarians, and Tartars.

The only princes of note during the second period were Vladimir Monomachus, and Andrew. The first distinguished himself in distant campaigns, mainly undertaken for the redress of injuries; and

Digitized by Google

yet more by his endeavours to secure the peace of the country, and by the succour he gave to the weak against the oppressions of the strong. The second, Andrew, was artful and politic, and is best known for having removed his seat of government to Vladimir, to withdraw it from the attacks of the Poles and the nomad tribes bordering on Kief. He also aggrandised Moscow, and drew into Central Russia, by the attractions of peace, all the population of the south, who were worried by the disturbances that raged around them. The other princes of the period were only unfortunate burdens on the country, which they did their best to distract with all the horrors of rivalry and war, till, towards the middle of the twelfth century, the grand-principality was reduced to little more than the capital and its immediate surroundings, and the paramount sovereignty to a vain title which was neither respected nor feared.

These intestine divisions led to the subjugation of Russia in the third period, which was the era of Chingez Khan, who united the Moguls and Tartars under him, and extended his barbaric dominion in every direction. After having conquered all Asia, he turned his eyes towards Europe; and, the plan sketched out by him being adhered to by his successors, they penetrated westward as far as Hungary and Poland, whence, being disgusted by the poverty of the inhabitants, they turned back upon Russia, where they destroyed everything before them, ravaging what they did not conquer, and collecting tribute and slaves. The southern part of Russia was conquered in 1224, but the subjection of the whole country was not completed till 1237-40, by Batou Khan, a grandson of Chingez. The Tartars

Digitized by Google

did not settle in Russia; the Khan of the Golden Horde only had his headquarters in it, but his people wandered about as nomads, and the princes of Russia were not unthroned. The latter were allowed to reign, paying tribute; and no prince, from the time of Yaroslaf II. to that of Ivan III., dared to arrogate regal powers without having first paid homage to the Khan as his suzerain. It is said that they took the oath of fidelity on their knees, and in terms of abject servility; and this degradation was continued for more than two centuries—namely, from the commencement of the thirteenth to the middle of the fifteenth century. Occasionally, when the Tartars were caught nodding, revolts against them were attempted; but the Golden Horde was always strong enough to suppress them: and on one occasion Russia was only saved from absolute destruction by the intercession of Alexander, prince of Novogorod, whom the Tartars regarded with affection and respect. This prince also did service to his country by defeating the Teutonic knights of Prussia on their endeavouring to strip Russia even of what the Tartars had spared; and the battle having been gained on the banks of the Neva, he obtained the name of Nevski from the success of his arms. Another grand-prince whom the Tartars respected was Ivan I., surnamed Kalita, who was able with their assistance to reunite the appanages of the grand-principality, after which he removed the seat of government to Moscow, the position of which, being centrical, was considered to be best suited for reuniting the whole empire; an arrangement which the Tartars should not have permitted, as it enabled the grand-prince to re-establish order and justice, encourage commerce, open out marts

Digitized by Google

and fairs, and concentrate the sovereign power, which necessarily undermined the supremacy of his suzerain.

The first to refuse tribute to the Golden Horde was Dimitri, whose contumacy gave rise to reciprocal incursions into the territories of each other by the Russians and the Tartars. Finally, the latter, advancing against the grand-prince in large numbers, were met by him and defeated on the banks of the Don, for which victory he received the surname of Donski. But new Tartar hordes were not slow in making their appearance; and Dimitri, abandoned by his brother princes, was unable to withstand them, the consequence of which was, that Moscow was devastated, the country around it ravaged, and the inhabitants massacred. In the reign of Vassili II., a fresh descent on Moscow was threatened by a different devastator, Timour, who had intermediately destroyed the empire of the descendants of Chingez. But his thoughts soon after took a different direction, though not till the Golden Horde, which had hitherto exacted tribute from the Russians, had received from him a severe blow, from which it never rallied. The struggles between the grand-princes and Tartars henceforth became more frequent, and the tributes imposed by the latter were paid or refused as the Khans happened to be strong or imbecile. The amounts of the tributes paid were also regulated by the same test; and if Vassili III., driven from his throne by a more fortunate competitor, went to implore the protection of his suzerain, it was only because he did not know where else to seek for aid.

Of the fourth epoch the greatest sovereign was Ivan III., called Ivan the Great, who had both

Digitized by Google

intelligence and vigour to profit by the movement which had already set in for reuniting the dismembered principality, with a view to re-establish one single and despotic throne. To this end he devoted his entire energies; and, the Tartars having already become enfeebled by intestine divisions, he commenced operations by seeking for glory against them, which he knew would help him best in carrying out internal reforms. He accordingly undertook an exterminating war against them, refused to pay tribute to the Golden Horde, and eventually succeeded in destroying it, with atrocities peculiar to the age. The Nagais, another branch of the race, and enemies of the Golden Horde, completed the extermination of those whom the Russians had spared; and thus was Russia liberated. After this, Ivan found it comparatively easy to reduce the independent princes who shared amongst them the heritage of Rurik; defeated the Poles in one direction and the Teutonic knights in another; and became sole and absolute master of all Russia, into which he imported the civilisation of the south. He brought over arts and artists from Italy, and all the knowledge of the Greeks; raised the Kremlin with the aid of engineers secured from Germany; had cannons cast and placed over it; and procured the services of foreign miners to work the mines of Petchora, which were discovered during his reign, which enabled him to coin money both in silver and copper. The weight of Russia was by these means brought to bear on the balance of Europe, and the administration of the country was at the same time improved by a reorganisation of the clerical order, whose manners were reformed, and by the enactment of a new code of laws which

Digitized by Google

kept pace with the general improvement of the country.

The complete restoration of the principality was achieved by Ivan IV. the Terrible, known in history as the first Czar, though that title had been conferred previously by the Greek emperor on the son of Yaroslaf I., and again on Ivan III. on his marriage with the Greek princess Sophia. The word has been supposed by many to be a corruption of the title Cæsar, but this is erroneous. It is an old oriental word signifying supreme authority; and as the authority of the grand-duke—a title which Ivan III. had assumed in preference to that of grand-prince—had become supreme from the time of Ivan IV., he was justly entitled to the name now adopted by him. He concentrated his power more fully even than his immediate predecessors had done; established a standing army which went by the name of the Strelitz, or imperial guards; compelled the nobles to accept service, the richest at their own cost, and the rest on small pay, these constituting the best strength of his empire; but left the cultivators, inhabitants of towns, and especially traders, free to follow their own occupations, except in times of imminent danger, when they also had to bear arms. He at the same time improved the civil organisation of the empire, encouraged, like Ivan III., the importation of foreign industry, opened the first printing-office in Moscow, rearranged the laws, negotiated treaties of commerce with the nations of the West, and established a market at Narva, to which the English, French, Dutch, and Lubeckers resorted. He moreover subdued the Tartars of Kasan and Astrakan; but was, on the other hand, obliged to abandon Esthonia and Revel to the Swedes, and

Digitized by Google

Livonia to the Poles. What Ivan's reign was, however, best known for, were his cruelties, which were frightful. The number of men and women whom he caused to perish cannot be counted. The people of Novogorod having ventured to revolt, were mercilessly destroyed, the massacre being continued for five weeks; the inhabitants of Pleskop and Twer, who were accused of secret intelligence with Poland, were first tortured and then decapitated, while eight hundred of their women were drowned. Every day the Czar invented new modes of punishment: he let loose bears from his menageries whenever he saw crowds, and amused himself by listening to the cries of those who were attacked and torn to pieces; stripped women naked and had them dishonoured before he allowed their sufferings to terminate; compelled people to become parricides and fratricides, and then punished them for the crimes they were forced to perpetrate; and yet, in the midst of so many murders and so many victims, there was not one hand raised to oppose his power. In his reign Siberia was conquered by Jermaf Timofief, a hetman or chief of the Cossacks of the Don, who was loaded with honours and favour, not so much for his conquest as for the carnage and ferocity with which it was achieved.

At the end of the fourth epoch Boris Godunof, the descendant of a Tartar, and the brother of the wife of Ivan IV., became king, by the murder of an infant prince named Dimitri, with whom the race of Rurik was terminated. Having cleared the way for himself, Boris pretended at first that he had no desire to ascend the throne. He even affected to fly from it, and sought refuge in a monastery, where the grandees and the people besieged him with sup-

Digitized by Google

plications which he continued to resist. The sceptre was at last forced on him; two public elections mastered his aversion for grandeur, and the imperial power was assumed under the guise of the purest virtue and the noblest disinterestedness. He then completed the scheme which Ivan III. and Ivan IV. had chalked out, stifled the power of the nobles, and reduced the whole nation to an order of slaves. No free intercourse, no public meeting, no travelling through the country, no public minstrelsy even, was permitted during his reign without imperial licence; serfdom of the soil was firmly established; and, if the peasants fled in large numbers to seek freedom among the Cossacks, in still larger numbers they submitted to the life that was marked out for them. Godunof was not prodigal in crime, though he did not spare it. What he did, however, was done privately; and his reign would have passed off quietly but for the appearance of two impostors, one after another, who personated the prince Dimitri who had been murdered, and who, with the assistance of the Poles, gave rise to a revolt. At this crisis Boris died, while some assert that he poisoned himself. The disturbances continued for some time after his death; Russia was distracted, and fell into such a state of weakness that her neighbours vied with each other in trampling down her territory: till at last arose the unanimous cry of "Death to the Impostor!" which, after some further commotions, was succeeded by the election of Michael Romanoff, a young man of sixteen years, to the throne. This choice was directed by the clergy, Michael being the son of Philaretes, the Patriarch of all the Russias; and it received the cordial support of the people owing to some ill-defined relationship that

Digitized by Google

the Romanoffs bore, or pretended to bear, to the house of Rurik.

Michael ascended the throne in 1613, which commenced the fifth period of Russian history. Of the first period, the great sovereigns, we have seen, were Rurik, the founder; Oleg, the conquerer; Olga, the regent; Vladimir, the Christian; and Yaroslaf, the legislator. The second and third periods were less productive of great rulers, Vladimir Monomachus and Andrew having belonged to one, and Alexander Nevski, Ivan Kalita, and Dimitri Donski to the other; and throughout both of them the condition of Russia was one of much distress and despondency. The fourth period was that of deliverance, but unfortunately also of despotism; and the only great kings it produced—namely, Ivan the Autocrat, Ivan the Terrible, and Boris Godunof—were also those who riveted the chains most firmly on the people. In the first period the descendants of Rurik were all in all, and divided and subdivided the country among themselves, and were absolute masters, who did not permit the intervention of other classes. "I am a prince," was the boast of the age, "and am not made to take advice from monks or the mob." The subsequent weakness of the rulers brought the nobility to the foreground. The subjection of the people dates from the Tartar conquest, when slaves were asked for and given, and previous to which the infliction of corporal punishment was not known. In the reign of Ivan III. slavery was systematically established, the penalties enforced by his code being the knout, slavery, and death. It was he who first enforced blind servility, to which the people, already cowed down by the fear of the Tartars, submitted

Digitized by Google

with willingness. Up to the time of Ivan IV. the ignorance of the Russians was so great that reading and writing were generally unknown. A people originally free was by these means thoroughly enslaved.

The reign of Alexis was chiefly famous for his war with the Poles, which resulted in the relinquishment by the king of Poland, in favour of the Czar, of the supremacy he had exercised till then over the Cossacks of the Ukraine. It was also distinguished by the re-establishment of communications with China, which had been interrupted, and by communication and trade with Persia being resumed. Internally it was marked by a revolt, not against the authority of the Czar, but against that of his prime minister Morozoff, who virtually exercised the sovereign power in a manner which exhausted the patience of the people. Rising *en masse*, they captured and killed the relatives of the minister, after which they laid siege to the palace. The Czar implored them to spare Morozoff; and this was agreed to by them on two or three other noblemen, his principal agents, being given up in his place, whom they tore to pieces in their fury. This was quite a new thing in Russia. It was opposed to the creed of profound servility to which the people were habituated. A taste for sedition and blood being thus acquired, new troubles arose in other parts of the empire which had to be put down. In the east a brigand, a Cossack of the Don, emulating the audacity of Chingez and Timour, threatened to lay siege to Moscow and make it the tomb of the nobles, priests, and soldiers; but his luck and prudence were not equal to his boast, and on his being captured and quartered, the rest of Alexis's reign was undisturbed.

Digitized by Google

The greatest prince of the house of Romanoff was Peter the Great, of whom it is not necessary to say much, though very little cannot well be said of him. He was proclaimed sovereign jointly with Ivan V., his half-brother; and, both being minors at the time, his half-sister Sophia was appointed regent. Many attempts were made by Sophia to exclude Peter from the throne, and prolong her authority during the perpetual infancy of the weak-minded Ivan; but, at the age of seventeen, Peter was able to subvert her intrigues and defeat an attempt made to assassinate him, after which the tables were turned upon her, and she was shut up in a convent. Ivan dying a few years after, Peter became sole autocrat, and commenced a reign which is particularly instructive, as showing what an original mind, however barbarous, may achieve when left untrammelled to itself. The cruelties of the man were revolting; but his regal acts were stupendously great—certainly greater than the labours of any Hercules who had preceded him. The views of the king were singularly enlarged for a mind so utterly unenlightened. His first act, as we have said, was to defeat the plan laid against his life. A nocturnal conflagration had been designed by the Strelitz, at the instance of Sophia, in which he was to have been murdered. The plot was discovered, and the conspirators captured and punished—brutally, with all the ferocity of an exasperated barbarian. They were first put to the rack, then mutilated and killed; after which their heads and limbs were prominently exposed. This was to have been expected, from the ferocity of the man and the times. The enmity of the Strelitz impressed on Peter the necessity of raising a body of land forces on whom he could depend, sufficiently

Digitized by Google

strong to overpower opposition of every sort; and the idea was carried out as soon as it arose. The first nucleus of this army were fifty of the king's own companions in debauchery, whom he trained up personally for the purpose. This force was gradually augmented till it reached the modest strength of 200,000 men; and to render it fully efficient, he got engineers and gunners from Germany, Holland, and Prussia, to instruct and strengthen it. The idea of a fleet was similarly acquired by the sight of the remains of a sailing-boat, which was repaired for the Czar, and carried him afloat. Fifty young men were thereupon sent to Italy to learn the art of navigation, as forty young men had previously been sent to Germany to acquire military discipline. Not content with this, the Czar proceeded personally to foreign parts, and especially to Holland and England, to learn shipbuilding and other useful acquirements; and, on his return from those countries, he brought back with him not only artificers, but also geometricians and mathematicians to instruct his people. A strong navy was constructed—consisting of forty ships of the line, and two hundred galleys with sails and oars, with a multitude of experienced mariners to man them.

His first tour carried Peter to Brandenburg, Denmark, Holland, England, and Vienna, from the last of which places he intended to proceed to Venice and Rome, when he was recalled by the news of a general insurrection of the Strelitz at home. In a second tour he visited Holland again, and France. When he came back from his first tour, his army had already defeated and crushed the rebellion; but this was not enough for the offended Czar. Seven thousand prisoners were hanged or beheaded,

Digitized by Google

with every refinement of diabolical cruelty, Peter assisting in the execution with his own hands. Even the widows and children of the culprits were not let free, but deported to distant and desert places for crimes not their own; and all subsequent insurrections were similarly dealt with. His cruelties to his own family were equally diabolical. His first wife, Eudoxia Lapukin, was divorced for adultery, imprisoned, and scourged, while her lover was impaled alive. His son by the divorced Czarina, having been tried for rebellion, was condemned and poisoned, the poison being administered by the infatuated father himself. The second wife was the widow of a Swedish soldier, captured amid the ruins of a pillaged town. She had two lovers before her marriage with the Czar, and one after that period, which was discovered only towards the termination of Peter's life, and was punished by the decapitation of the lover, though Catherine, for the many services she had rendered her husband, was spared.

The great object of Peter's life was to civilise his people. He became a soldier and a sailor to teach them the art of war by sea and land; after that he became a merchant and manufacturer, to teach them the arts of peace. In all his undertakings, perseverance was the prime agent; and he did succeed in teaching his people every branch of useful industry. He introduced, besides, a multitude of reforms in civil and ecclesiastical affairs, and in the usages of society. For some of these reforms he was named "Antichrist" by the priests; but he gave more to the Church than he took away from her; and while he made the clergy more regular and learned, he gave them no real cause to be dissatisfied with him, except that he abolished the Pa-

Digitized by Google

triarchate, the honours of which were assumed by the Czar. His other achievements were the formation of a regular police, the establishment of a multitude of elementary schools and colleges for science, belles-lettres, and the arts, the establishment of a library, the formation of a botanical garden, &c. He also founded St Petersburg — a city larger than London itself, though of course neither so rich nor so well peopled; and Cronstadt, which was completed by Nicholas, and which an English admiral, at the head of an English fleet of uncommon strength, was unable to bombard. What was better understood still was that he gave Russia six provinces, two seas, an extended commerce, fortresses and ports, and the army and navy to which we have referred. Well might such a man at his last moments, oppressed by a sense of his crimes and cruelties, declare as he did,—"I dare hope that God will look upon me with a merciful eye for all the good I have done to my country."

The military achievements of Peter were varied. He drove the Tartars and the Turks from the Crimea, which enabled him fully to open out the commerce with Persia through Georgia. His war with Charles XII. of Sweden is well known. The intrepidity and valour of the Swede at first carried everything before him; but Peter stood his ground. "I know well," said he, "that the Swedes will have the advantage of us for a considerable time; but they will teach us at length to beat them." The experience required was gained; his army received that development which it stood in need of; and the royal Swede, defeated at Pultowa, was never able to recover. This gave Russia for the first time political consideration in Europe; and her sovereign

Digitized by Google

was hailed by the potentates of all the neighbouring states by the title of Emperor. He proved less successful in a war with the Turks, being reduced to a disastrous state on the banks of the Pruth, from which he was extricated solely by the wit of his wife, who patched up a hasty peace with the Grand Vizier, which set him free. It is said that that wife afterwards, on her intrigue with Moens being discovered, administered poison to him, of which he died. This, however, is by no means probable; it is more generally believed that he sank under the effects of his own debaucheries, being carried off by a venereal distemper for which the pharmacopœia of the age had no remedy.

The reigns of Catherine I., Peter II., Anne, and Elizabeth, do not present any features of particular interest. The last two were entirely governed by their paramours. Anne, ambitious of military glory, trained and fitted her army for European warfare by fighting with the Poles, Tartars, and Turks. In the reign of Elizabeth the Seven Years' War with Prussia was commenced, which was terminated by Peter III., who then proceeded to introduce various reforms into Russia. These gave dissatisfaction to his subjects, including the clergy, who were particularly scandalised at a mad order threatening their beards. He also incurred the displeasure of his wife, a sensual woman, who, conspiring against him, had him deposed and murdered, after which she ascended the throne herself as Catherine II. At this time morality was unknown in the imperial and aristocratic circles of Russia. Catherine had four or five lovers while her husband was living; after his death their number was counted by hundreds, the empress disdaining to cover her pleasures

Digitized by Google

by a veil. Her personal aide-de-camp was constantly changed; and this officer always slept in the palace, in an apartment that communicated with that of his sovereign. But barring this weakness, the rule of Catherine was very vigorous, and historians have justly considered it as the most brilliant chapter in the history of Russia. She was a woman of uncommon abilities, whose active genius replaced Russia in the rank to which Peter I. had momentarily raised her. Her projects were as ambitious as those of Peter; she extended the limits of the empire in every direction, especially towards Constantinople, by annexing the Crimea and the adjacent country, and towards the Caspian. She also renewed with success the intercourse of Russia with China, opened an intercourse with Japan, and established on a salutary footing the trade with Persia. Aspiring to every kind of celebrity, she further gave her people a new code of laws, encouraged letters and the arts and sciences amongst them, and did everything to improve their manners and condition, convoking even a general council of deputies, in which representatives from the polar regions met face to face with those from the Crimea and the Caucasus. What her name, however, will best be remembered for is the partition of Poland, which was effected in concert with Prussia and Austria. The idea was that of Maria Theresa; but the principal agents to give effect to it were Frederick II. of Prussia and the Czarina. Russia obtained by that transaction an addition of 2200 square miles of territory, and one and a half millions of subjects. The French Revolution broke out shortly after; but Catherine, though she promised assistance largely, was unable to do anything to put it down. The fact is, she had aggrand-

Digitized by Google

ised Russia at the expense of her positive strength; and the consequence was, that towards the close of her reign the empire got enfeebled, from all its springs having become relaxed and impaired. She had firmness enough to refuse to share the throne with any of her favourites; but the very circumstance of their personal connection with her had given to scores and hundreds of knaves the option of abusing their influence. The resources of the empire were wasted by these drones, and all kinds of disorder and disorganisation were introduced into the administration. An apoplexy carried off the great Messalina of the north, just when the lustre of her reign had commenced to grow dim. Some have it that she saw her husband's ghost, fell down with a shriek, and expired.

The Emperor Paul, known in history as the mad emperor, succeeded Catherine, and was contemporaneous with Napoleon I. The first league of Paul was with Austria against France; and four armies advanced at the voice of the autocrat from the confines of Asia to subjugate and crush the republican government. The victory of Marengo, which delivered Italy to France and crushed the power of Austria, changed the sentiments of Paul into an admiration for Napoleon; and, the arrogation of a right of search on the seas by the British government having given him offence, he entered into an alliance with France for the overthrow of the British power. He also formed a confederation with Sweden, Denmark, and Prussia for the protection of trading vessels against the right claimed by England. Both the alliance and the confederation were frustrated by the assassination of Paul and Nelson's victory at Copenhagen. The former, Bonaparte insinuated,

Digitized by Google

was brought about by the English government, from a fear of the combination of Russia with France, and particularly of the preparations made by the former for attacking India through Persia. "Paul," said the first consul, "died on the night of the 23d March; the English fleet passed the Sound on the 30th: history will unveil the connection which existed between these events." The calumny, however, did not stick; it was even then well known that the death of Paul was due to the machinations, not of England, but of his own officers, and that the crime was participated in by his son. The number of conspirators was so great that no one was ever punished; and in the reign of Alexander I. many openly boasted of their connection with the crime.

The history of Russia now becomes the history of Europe. The four principal events of the reign of Alexander I. were the treaty of Tilsit, the annexation of Finland, the burning of Moscow, and the capitulation of Paris. The elevation of the first consul to the imperial dignity gave rise to the rupture between Russia and France. Bent upon setting bounds to Bonaparte's ambition, Alexander joined Austria to repel his invasions, and shared in the defeat at Austerlitz. Continuing in the war, the Russians were again defeated at Friedland, subsequent to which peace was made between the emperors after a personal conference at Tilsit, where many secret engagements were exchanged for the partition of Europe and the establishment of a duocracy to divide the world between Russia and France. As usual, however, each wanted the lion's share of the prize; and, unable to wait, Alexander marched against Sweden while Napoleon was yet fighting with Austria, took the gallant Gustavus by surprise, and

Digitized by Google

annexed Finland with the whole of East Bothnia and a part of West Bothnia, on the sole pretext that the Swedes had not closed the ports of the Baltic against the English. Equally dexterous and successful was his policy on the side of Turkey, which he stripped of Bessarabia. He also wanted Wallachia and Moldavia; and, as Napoleon would not allow him to have them, there was a fresh rupture with France, which widened into the campaign of 1812. The march to Moscow, and the voluntary sacrifice of the city, which annihilated the hopes of Napoleon, were incidents unique in the history of the world. The French, who had the best personal knowledge of the event, have never attempted to imitate the heroism of the Russians, though they might have done so with credit on diverse occasions. After her triumph, Russia assumed the protection of Germany, and actually did rescue her from the grasp of Napoleon, who was defeated by the allied armies at Leipsic. France was then entered and Paris occupied, and Napoleon compelled to abdicate and retire to Elba.

The reign of Nicholas was opposed at the outset by an ineffectual insurrection at St Petersburg, and was afterwards distinguished by a short but successful war with Persia and the annexation of Georgia and Armenia, by the suppression of an insurrection in Poland, and by two wars with Turkey, one in 1828 and the other in 1854, in the last of which Turkey was assisted by France, England, and Sardinia, and Russia defeated and Sebastopol taken and destroyed. The origin of this last war, as explained by the secret and confidential communications of Russia to England, showed with what pertinacity the imperial government was pur-

Digitized by Google

suing its original scheme of aggrandisement, generally attributed to Peter the Great. The sick man was about to die; it was no longer necessary to uphold what did not admit of being propped up; if England would allow the annexation of Turkey by Russia, Russia would leave her at liberty to take Egypt and Candia. The partition thus proposed was prevented for the time by the war that followed; but Russia is so persistent that it is doubtful if it will be prevented long. It is true that Turkey has become stronger now than she has been for a long time past; but Turkey under no circumstances will ever be able to stand her ground alone against Russia.

The most remarkable feature connected with Russia is the vastness of her territory and the immensity of her population, which is estimated at not less than 80 millions, allowing 68 millions for European Russia and 12 millions for Russia in Asia. The preponderance which this gives Russia in the councils of Europe is apparent, since even united Germany does not count numbers so large. But, taking each entire empire as a whole, the subjects of Great Britain considerably outnumber even those of Russia, since India alone contains a population of 195 millions, of which Bengal holds 67 millions, or nearly as much as is held by the whole of European Russia. Such being the case, it is rather surprising that the variety of races in Russia should be nearly as great as it is in India, though it ought not to be more than a fifth greater than the variety in Bengal. The chief Russian divisions are the Slavonians—including the Poles and Cossacks; the Letts; the Finns; the Tartars—including the Mongols, Mantchous, and Caucasians;

Digitized by Google

the Samojedes, and the Ostraks; with numerous subdivisions more broadly defined than even the main distinct races of India. The consequence is, that there is greater internal disunion within the Russian empire than perhaps within any other country either in Europe or Asia; but this is so well covered by the despotism that rules over the empire, that it is scarcely even dreamt of in Europe, where the general idea is that the Russians, taken all in all, are a very homogeneous people, than which there cannot possibly be a greater fallacy. Precise information regarding the internal state of Russia is not attainable; no view which differs from the official one has any chance of seeing the light.

The vastness of Russia has been the result of her position, which left her no alternative but to swallow up all the neighbouring states. The empire of Rurik was confined to a small bit of territory in the north of European Russia. Ivan III. conquered Astrakhan and Kasan; Ivan IV., Siberia; Alexis, the Ukraine; Peter I., most of the Baltic provinces; Catherine II., the western provinces of Lithuania, Podolia, and Volhynia, the southern portion of European Russia down to the Crimea, and a part of the Caucasus; while Alexander I. conquered Finland and Bothnia; and Nicholas added Armenia and Georgia, besides finally subduing the Poles. Over the whole of this territory Russia has now built fortresses and prisons, if not churches and hospitals also; large canals have been excavated; mines opened out; and manufactories established. Latterly several railways also have been laid down, though a great extent of country is yet devoid of good ordinary roads; and, to preserve a strong hold on the whole empire, it has been divided into more than

Digitized by Google

fifty subordinate governments, with a governor over each. The manner in which all this consolidation has been effected has not been altogether blameless; but allowances must be made for the barbarism of the country, and the races by which it is peopled. The Americans allot the whole old world to Russia, and very complacently apportion the whole new world to themselves. The wish implied in the division is never likely to fructify. But it fully recognises the importance which Russia has attained, though whether the large extent of her possessions is really of much benefit to her as it now stands is a question that can only be very doubtfully answered.

Over all this vast dominion the emperor is uncontrolled autocrat, an expression which means much more in Russia than in Germany and Austria. An order of the emperor in the latter places would doubtless be as promptly carried out as in Russia, but in them it would only be carried out by officers holding their places under the government; while in Russia, so great is the fear of the despot from one extremity of the empire to the other, that it would be unmurmuringly carried out by the people also, even if it were prejudicial to themselves. The origin of this autocracy is to be traced to Ivan III., who conceived it as the only means by which the authority assumed by the Tartars was to be destroyed, and order restored to an empire distracted by petty tyrannies. He was helped in securing it by the people themselves, who suffered most from the state of anarchy that prevailed, and were anxious to find shelter under the imperial wings. It was enormously increased by the able lunatic Ivan IV., whose freaks of madness were never attempted to be circumscribed. The edifice was completed by

Digitized by Google

Peter I., who finished his part of the work by assuming the Pontificate, remarking, as he compared himself with Louis XIV., that, while the latter was under the orders of his priests, he, Peter, was above them. Enormous was the power and enormous the responsibility thus arrogated, but no one ever dreamt of objecting to it. Peter exterminated the Strelitz without one cry of vengeance being raised against him; Catherine II. deposed and assassinated her husband, but was acknowledged as empress by all his subjects on bended knee; and yet, such misuse of power would probably not have been as quietly tolerated even by the slaves of China and Persia. In the case of Paul I. only, which is of later date than the others, was the idea first admitted that an autocrat when tyrannous might be opposed and killed. But, even in that instance, the idea would never have arisen save for the connivance of the son in his father's murder; and, after all, it was his nobles who killed him—there was no complaint against him from the people. The people throughout the history of the country are always seen as supporting the emperor's autocracy, which has always shielded them from the oppressions of the nobility, and the ill effects of which do not directly affect them. Hence the myth that the Czar is regarded as the father of his people; his power certainly is never questioned. Petty revolts of the people have occurred at times, but against the officers of the state, not against the imperial power.

"The Russian nobility," as Paul I. explained to the French ambassador, "are those only to whom the Czar speaks; and they are great only so long as he does speak to them." The first aristocracy of Russia was composed of the followers of Rurik. The

Digitized by Google

nobles of ducal blood were the personal relations of the sovereign and their progeny; the rest of the nobility being made up of military chiefs, who were called "boyars" and "voivodes" by the Slavonians, from the terms "boi," meaning a battle, and "voij-voda," the leader of an army. When the custom of dividing the territories of the principality into appanages was adopted, the nobility of the first grade was enormously increased; but, on the unity of the empire being re-established by Ivan III., the princely houses were reduced to an equality with the other nobles, and all registered promiscuously in the national peerage. The official nobility of Russia was created by Peter I., and up to the reign of Peter III. no one was admitted into the aristocracy who had not served the Crown in a military or civil capacity, which necessarily made it compulsory on all hereditary nobles to take service; but since then such compulsion has not been held imperative, except in eminent need, when all the nobility are expected to turn out. The classes now are,—hereditary nobles, who do not enter the service unless they wish it; and official nobles, who are such only for the appointments they hold. Of the former the power is entirely nominal, and the people show them no respect. The latter constitute a bureaucracy, and, acting in concert, have all the patronage and authority of the government in their hands. The original rights of the aristocracy included the privilege of holding serfs, the option of entering the public service, and exemption from the payment of taxes and from corporal punishment. The first of these privileges has since been taken away, and the position of the nobleman who has no official status has necessarily become insignificant.

Digitized by Google

It would have been absolutely so if the aristocracy did not include all the educated men in the country. In the past they joined in many movements which gave trouble; but these always consisted of conspiracies and murders, there was never any attempt made by them at constitutional resistance. What they are now particularly famous for is their official corruption. "The only person," said Nicholas, "who is not a thief in my dominions is myself."

The government of Russia is strictly arbitrary. It is administered by a Council of the Empire, which has charge of all measures relating to home policy; a Directing Senate, which promulgates and watches over the execution of imperial enactments; and a Holy Synod, which attends to all ecclesiastical affairs. Over all these the emperor presides, either personally or by proxy; and he is at all times at liberty to annul their decisions by an exercise of his will. The third assembly is entirely composed of clergymen, but, in the time of Nicholas, was presided over by a general of cavalry! The Council of the Empire consists of the princes and statesmen of the country, and numbers forty members; the Directing Senate is formed of the three first classes of the state, and comprises one hundred members: the people are not represented in either. The ministerial functions of the empire are performed by ministries, which are nine in number, and are subdivided into special sections and departments. They act independently of each other, and directly under the emperor's orders.

The people have no voice in the government in Russia: nay, till recently, had no voice even in their own affairs. The Slavonians, who formed the basis and the heart of the nation in European Russia, were

Digitized by Google

originally free. The Varangians, or Russi, came and changed their laws and institutions; but they were too few in number to reduce them to serfs. The position of the peasants in Russia up to the time of Ivan IV. was the same as in other countries generally. They were free, and worked either as farmers or as hired servants. It was Feodar who first prohibited the employment of hired servants; and Boris Godunof, in improving on the idea, enacted, in the interests of the peasants, that they should not be liable to arbitrary expulsion from the soil. This was intended to check the tyranny of the wealthy boyars; but it eventually led to the servitude of the peasants. By a subsequent ordinance it was ruled that servants who worked by contract should not be allowed to quit their masters; and the operation of the two orders together reduced thousands and thousands of freemen to bondage to the soil. What was left unfinished by Boris was accomplished by Peter I., who made estates hereditary, and bound the serfs to their proprietors. Of course the serfs rose constantly against their masters, many of whom were killed; it was not in human nature to submit to such arrangements without a protest: but all their opposition only riveted the chains more strongly on them, till they got brutalised by habit and ceased to struggle. Alexis and Catherine II. were the only two sovereigns who thought of emancipating the peasants, but were not able to effect it. Nicholas attempted to alleviate their miseries; but his object was misunderstood, and led to a servile revolt. The gordian knot has since been cut by Alexander II., by a general liberation of the serfs. It is said that this has not benefited them—that, on the contrary, it has much increased drunkenness amongst

Digitized by Google

them, and made them improvident; but this is probably a one-sided representation. It has made the sovereign more popular than the autocrat of all the Russias ever was, notwithstanding all the deference he was accustomed to receive. His power now is based on the interests of his people: he is master of men who believe that all their hopes of safety and security rest in him, and in him alone. When they are better educated, their hopes and aspirations may take a different turn; and it is said that a strong desire for intellectual improvement is already developing itself among them. It may, nevertheless, be taken for granted that for a long time to come the power of the Czar over them is perfectly secure.

The intermediate classes between the boyars and the serfs are traders, workmen, and students—all of them very sparsely scattered over the country. The condition of these is not worse than that of similar classes in other places. Nay, the contrast between the rich and the poor is less in Russia than in most other countries. The poorer classes do not complain of an insufficiency of food, though that food is necessarily of the coarsest kind: the humblest are everywhere well lodged and well clothed. The common people in all places are almost the same in customs, manners, and tastes. Even the food is nearly the same among them; and this general sameness of life is the cause of that apparent unity of character for which the Russians are so remarkable. The general character of the people is also very fair. The example of most of the female sovereigns, and especially of Catherine II, introduced a very low morality at one time among the higher classes; debauchery was publicly gratified; a so-called club of philosophers openly indulged in bestial practices

Digitized by Google

with women of the higher grades, and husbands were glad to introduce their wives, and brothers their sisters, into this model institution. But this ultra refinement of the upper ten thousand did not go low enough to contaminate the poor; and the latter are generally better behaved than their equals in most other countries, except in the matter of spirituous drink, in which they excel even the English. What is remarkable, however, is that the excess does not tell on their constitution in the slightest degree—a clear proof that the use of spirituous liquors, even in large quantities, is not hurtful in all climates.

The civilisation of Russia is of recent growth, and dates from the time when St Petersburg was founded, which enabled her to hold direct communication with Europe. Only a hundred and fifty years ago she had no possessions either on the Baltic or the Black Sea, and was necessarily nothing but an Asiatic power. Peter I. completed the arrangements which made her a European power, and established free communication between her and the civilised states; and since then she has not only founded all her political institutions on the European model, but has established a thriving trade, and expanded a suddenly created navy. Even her wars with the western nations have been of benefit to her in refining her manners and conferring on her the first rudiments of practical and useful education. In the Crimean war the humanity shown to the wounded on the battle-field by the allies was a new lesson to the descendants of the Cossacks and Tartars, which they would never otherwise have learned in half a century. They also learned from the war their immense need of railways and telegraphs; and, accepting the lesson

Digitized by Google

loyally, have already benefited by it, by introducing both broadcast throughout their extensive dominions. These improvements have been supplemented by irrigation and the cultivation of the useful arts, by means of which the resources of the country have been largely increased within the last twenty years, and her commerce widely extended.

At this moment the external commerce of Russia is divided into two main branches, one being her commerce with the nations of Europe, the other her commerce with the nations of Asia—the first of which is carried on for ready money and on credit as represented by bills of exchange, the other by barter or exchange of goods without credit in any shape. Her Asiatic commerce is chiefly carried on at Astrakhan and other ports of the Caspian, but has other depots even up to the frontiers of China, which are daily increasing in number. But Russia is not satisfied with this success, nor could it be expected that she would be. As compared with her bulk, her trade is yet in its infancy, particularly her sea traffic, which is represented by 2200 sea-going vessels only; and in other respects her improvements have been less. In letters and polity she has yet a name to establish: she has no poets, no philosophers, no historians whom she can point to with pride; no men of science, no artists, not even any great captains or statesmen. Stories and tales are the principal branches of Russian literature at this moment; wit and poetry have been so little appreciated, that, as a rule, they have invariably been exiled to Siberia. Of late only reviews and magazines have been started, which are generally ably conducted, and promise to be useful in the interests of popular education. As for religion, Russia embraced the Greek faith at

Digitized by Google

the command of Vladimir. The Eastern Empire was already tottering to its fall when this change was adopted. The Greek Church was bad enough then; it cannot be said that the Russian Church has become much better since. But great are the efforts now being made to enlighten the people; and this at least may be conceded, that western Russia is no longer the Tartar she was.

What Russia has chiefly directed her attention to is her army and navy. It would have been better if she had done so less; but it is said that she has a career chalked out for her which she must realise. The authenticity of Peter's Will has not been established. The 9th clause of the document known as such runs thus: "We must progress as much as possible in the direction of Constantinople and India. He who can get possession of those points is the real ruler of the world. With this view we must provoke constant quarrels—at one time with Turkey, at another with Persia. We must establish wharves and docks in the Euxine, and by degrees make ourselves masters of that sea as well as of the Baltic, which is a doubly important element in our plan. We must hasten the downfall of Persia; push on to the Persian Gulf; if possible re-establish the ancient commercial intercourse with the Levant through Syria, and force our way to the Indies, which are the storehouses of the world." This document, if genuine, was executed in 1725, or long before the English became masters of India, when the possibility of carrying out the idea in that direction was not hopeless. As the case now stands, great indeed must be the power that is able to achieve it; and it is more than probable that no one has ever really thought of it but Paul I., the madman.

Digitized by Google

What Russia does actually want is sufficiently intelligible, and it is an idea of Peter the Great that she is anxious to carry out. Russia has been and is still an Asiatic power, and she naturally seeks dominion over as much of Asia as she can acquire and *hold*. The mission of civilisation is not a blind, as has been most uncharitably supposed, for ambition for territorial aggrandisement. It is a matter-of-course sequence which Russia could not avoid even if she desired to do so. Russia does seek plainly and undisguisedly the overthrow of all *native* rule in Central Asia. Her first conquests there began with the subjugation of Kasan in 1487, and they have since been uniformly continued for nearly four hundred years. A methodical direction was given to them by Peter the Great, who, having visited Astrakhan in 1722, perceived that the gate to the Asiatic countries was through the land of the Khirgis; and from that time to this the efforts to expand through the Khirgis have been incessant. There is no mistake as to the policy followed. The majority of the Khirgis steppes are now under Russian rule, and from 1847 the policy of founding permanent forts all over the conquered tract has been uniformly adhered to. Just as England secured outposts all over the seas before asserting her proud pre-eminence over them, Russia is slowly but surely securing outposts all over Central Asia, where she will shortly be in a position to declare herself. But with the power of Russia her civilisation also is developing in the countries subjugated or brought under control. England did not go out to civilise India. First commerce, then conquest, and last diffusion of knowledge and the useful arts have followed; and such precisely is the Russian

Digitized by Google

policy without a blind. One main difference pointed out as existing between Russia and England in Asia is this, that while the government of the former is a military one, that of the latter is a civil one; but the difference is more nominal than real, for England also holds India by the sword.

It would have been better if England alone had been the civiliser of all Asia, instead of having Russia for her coadjutor. But it cannot be so, since England has plenty of other work on her hands in her colonies, and all her energies would not suffice for both duties being well performed. Her civilisation, also, is not exactly what would best suit the present condition of Asia generally. In a reign of one hundred and twenty years in India, she has not been able to make any decisive impression on the people, except, at an immense interval, on the Parsees and the Bengalis. Russian civilisation, though much lower than that of England, is better understood and more easily adopted by semi-barbarous tribes. The exalted ideas of freedom, the ceaseless yearning for progress which distinguish the Briton, are hard, very hard lessons for the Asiatics to master. The civilisation of Russia is more compromising. It will not destroy native habits and ideas, but gradually transform them. The Englishman will carry his roast beef and beer-bottle with him, and try to force them along with his notions of improvement. The Russian is an Asiatic himself, and will share the *chuppátie* of the Hindu, and drink *charná metro* with the Vysnub, and so induce them to come over to his side. Even conservative China communicates with Russia, and has done so for ages, though she always kept the English at a distance so long as she could do it with impunity.

Digitized by Google

As has been correctly observed by some one, the Asiatic, to become a European, must first be converted into a Russian. It would seem, therefore, that Central Asia has been designedly assigned by Providence to the charge of Russia for its amelioration, just as India has been especially assigned to England, as having already a higher civilisation than Russia can impart, and which would therefore benefit better, though more slowly, under English rule.

Need England quarrel, then, with Russia with reference to Central Asian affairs? If so, wherefore? The geographical position of Russia throws upon her the onus of conquering and civilising the native states of Asia. England cannot prevent this, any more than Russia can prevent her from colonising Australasia and Canada. Nor ought she to attempt to do it, since the progress of Russia in Asia has certainly been to the advantage of Asia. It is not in the power of Russia to take India, nor will she ever be so foolhardy as to attempt it. An attack on India is not possible except with the aid of the Afghans; and the chance of Afghanistan becoming a Russian dependency, or in any way subservient to Russian interests, is a very distant contingency. The Afghans will never be as easily brought under as the other races of Central Asia; and, should any attempt to subjugate them be made, the issue, with the assistance of British troops and British money to back them, need not be doubted. Of course, if Russia and England make up their minds to fight, a war can be got up; but that there is any necessity for it on one side or the other is not apparent. There is no reason whatever why England should not be able to form that definite and trustworthy alliance with Russia which would give Asia a century

Digitized by Google

of development and peace. In the natural progress of things the Russian and the British territories may touch, though not in the direction of Afghanistan; but even that is no reason why they should quarrel.

Let us now see what the wants of Russia are, and we shall be able to understand what she actually aims at. Russia has no sea-room for her commerce and navy; the world's great ocean is virtually closed to her; no sufficiently wide gateway has she for her supplies; no broad range for her ships of war. The Northern Ocean, of which she has the whole seaboard, is blocked up by ice; the Baltic can at any time be blocked up by a few ships of war; the Black Sea has no outlet for her except under an enemy's guns, and to a sea where the English flag is all-powerful. This is a position to which no great nation can willingly submit, and it is not in the power of England, or of any other country, to force Russia to continue in it. We may take it for granted, then, that her eye is on Persia; that she wants access both to the Mediterranean and the Indian Ocean. She has already cleared her way for this at all costs, and will declare herself as soon as she finds an opportunity to do so. From Astrabad to Herat, and from Herat to Persia, a regular army has an open way to go by; whereas in the Indian direction it would have to traverse Afghanistan, never easily accessible of itself.

But Russia wants something more than Persia. She wants, at the same time, to settle the Eastern question for good; to subvert the Mahomedan power in Turkey and Persia at one blow. This would not be a loss to England or to the world, nor could England prevent its consummation alone. On the last

Digitized by Google

occasion the war against Russia was waged by four distinct nations allied together. Two of those powers would not be able to afford the same assistance now if the question were reopened, as they have enough to do with their own affairs at home; and, if Russia could create difficulties for England in India, the problem as regards Turkey would solve itself, unless Germany were found willing to take up the position which France occupied on the last occasion. It is no slur on England—a naval power—that she cannot check the progress of Russia alone on land; and there are many reasons why she should not attempt to do so. The enmity of Russia may convulse India again as she was convulsed during the Sepoy Mutiny, possibly not without Russian cognisance. There is no reason whatever for risking this for what England cannot prevent. England's safest course, therefore, is to let Russia have her own way, for that would make Russia absolutely harmless so far as the English possessions are concerned. The army of Russia is perhaps the strongest in Europe, though essentially not so powerful by organisation and discipline as it is in numbers. She wants to develop her fleet to a similar extent—a mad idea, for the Russian will never make a sailor. But the whim may safely be allowed to take its course. England will not suffer in the slightest degree by Russia cleaving out her way through Constantinople to the Mediterranean, or through Persia to the Indian Ocean. The latter is, perhaps, at this moment as near to accomplishment as Russia herself could wish. It will only necessitate the maintenance by England of an additional force of about 15,000 men on the banks of the Indus, and a larger navy than she has at present in

Digitized by Google

the Indian Ocean for the protection of India and Australasia.

As yet Russia is not proceeding directly towards Persia, for there is no reason why she should show her cards before the right moment. It is even supposed by some that China is the real object of the Russian advance in Asia. For purposes of trade China has been open to Russia ever since Siberia was acquired in the reign of Ivan IV. She now threatens her more immediately from the west, but perhaps still only to acquire a commercial preponderance. It may, of course, be otherwise. The Muscovite is just the person to have more than one string to his bow. He will take China gladly if he can get her, but of that the certainty is not so great as of the conquest of Persia. An army of 50,000 Russians would walk through Persia with ease; an army of 100,000 Russians might do the same through China. But an army of 200,000 men would in all probability never cross the Indus. It is true enough that India has been repeatedly invaded and conquered from the north, and so it might be again if her geographical defences only had to be overcome, and if the old conditions of her position and the old methods of warfare could be revived. The equipment of modern armies renders it perfectly impossible to convey the materials of war through long deserts and difficult mountains; and, while the invaders would necessarily be without such materials on their arrival in India, they would find the defenders amply provided with them. The European army in India, though small, is one of the most highly finished instruments of war in the world; and, taking India by herself, without reference to any extraneous assistance she could, or could not, receive,

Digitized by Google

England is there strong enough to defy any power that Russia could bring to bear on her. The European army of Russia has enough to do in watching the armies of Prussia and Austria, and no portion of it could be withdrawn, even during the profoundest peace in Europe. In Asia she has in all about 200,000 troops; and these are fully employed in keeping down the warlike population of Central Asia, now held by her under subjection. Not more than 20,000 men of this army are available for offensive purposes; and very extraordinary measures could do no more than double or treble that number. Of course Russia could, if she wished it, increase her forces by drawing on the innumerable nomad hordes of Asia. But, in the first place, it is doubtful if those hordes would not themselves form her chief enemies; and, even if they were friendly to her, such undisciplined levies would only act as a dead weight on her. Britain, on her side, has an inexhaustible store of military races in India to draw upon; and if half a century more intervenes before the rupture breaks out, India will have become too strongly consolidated for the whole of Russia—European and Asiatic taken together—to be able to make the slightest impression on her.

All that Russia could do in India, therefore, virtually resolves itself to this—she could stir up troubles against the English by exciting mutiny and rebellion. But that is a game which two can play at; and the hold of Russia in Central Asia is certainly more insecure than the hold of Great Britain on India. The purse of England can do more. There are plenty of combustible materials throughout the Russian empire. Poland still sighs for the liberty she has lost; the Cossacks hate the Russian

Digitized by Google

rule; the Circassians still dream of independence; even the Siberians are not well reconciled to their condition. It is therefore in the power of England to raise a tempest in Russia which all the strength of the northern giant may not be able to allay.

The extent of her territory renders, or rather will render, Russia eventually capable of producing every commodity required for insuring her greatness. At present, however, her conquests, in their backward state, are but a burden to her. She will require more than a century to lick them into shape; and if, instead of following the paths of ambition, she devoted her energies to this object only, her position among nations would be much higher than at this moment it really is. It is only by courtesy that she is recognised as a civilised power. She has been straining every nerve to attain European civilisation; but even in European Russia, all the civilisation she has acquired is confined to the higher classes only, and has not penetrated the manners and customs of the lower. An educated or civilised Russian is not a Russian in the same sense as an educated Frenchman is a Frenchman, and an educated Englishman an Englishman—that is, one of the mass; while, further to the east, the Asiatic Russian is really more uncivilised than the Chinaman or the Hindu.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

THE OTHER STATES OF EUROPE.

THE remaining states of Europe do not require such lengthened notice as we have given to the primary powers. Some of them, it is true, had their eras of greatness, especially Spain, Portugal, and Holland; but their present weakness and imbecility are too great to hold out any promise of a very brilliant career in the future, and a brief allusion to their past will therefore fully suffice for that comprehensive view of the whole world which we are anxious to furnish. The best phases of their existence have long disappeared; with the exception of Italy, not one of them is making any exertion to recover lost ground; no anticipations for the future arise in reading of them. Though belonging to the modern world, they are already of the past.

Denmark, Sweden, and Norway.

In the north of Europe are the states of Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, which were originally known by the general name of Scandinavia, which has a very interesting history of its own. The Swedes and the Danes trace their descent from Noah to Odin, and the

Digitized by Google

Norwegians from Noah to Thor; but the accounts they give are based on tradition only, a fair part of which may nevertheless be true. Odin, according to Saxo-Grammaticus, was a king of the Hellespont, and apparently a Scythian, who proceeded in the direction of Germany and Scandinavia immediately after the fall of Troy. The aborigines of Scandinavia before this period were a few Lapps and Finns, who from this time forward were frequently overrun by immigrants from the south, the best known among whom were the Cimbri and the Goths. The people derived from a mixture of these races began to make themselves inconveniently known to their neighbours in the early ages of the Christian era by their piracies at sea. They were divided into tribes, each of which formed itself into a distinct community, subject to its own Jarl. The lands held by them were poor, and they had little disposition either for agriculture or trade; the whole of their life, therefore, was necessarily devoted to maritime expeditions. The age was that of giants and magicians, and of deeds of great hardihood and valour; and the traditions of the race are replete with accounts of both. In the ninth century Denmark was formed into a regular government by Gorm I., and Norway by Harold Haarfager (the fair-haired), who became their first kings respectively. Sweden was later in adopting a similar organisation, which she received from Eric in 1001. But these changes did not give general satisfaction, and many of the pirate chiefs, embarking in their own ships, went away in disgust to Iceland, and the Faröe, Shetland, and Orkney isles, whence they annually ravaged the coasts of their old country; while others contented themselves by periodical depredations on the coasts of Britain and France. In Britain these invaders

Digitized by Google

were best known as Danes, in France as Northmen or Normans, names which were regarded with equal terror in both countries. They also extended their power eastward, on the coasts of the Baltic, where they were known by the name of Varangians; and, after establishing themselves in Russia, passed down to Byzantium, where, for a long period, the Varangian guard of the emperor was the most faithful support of his throne.

Christianity was introduced into Denmark between the eighth and ninth centuries, and was extended thence to Sweden and Norway. In the eleventh century Denmark and Norway were united under the rule of Canute the Great, who also reigned over England, which had been conquered by his father Sweyn. In the fourteenth century the race of Odin in Sweden became extinct, and the ancient dynasties of Denmark and Norway ended at the same time in the person of a female named Margaret Waldemar, known as the Semiramis of the North, who, conquering Sweden, united the three kingdoms into one empire, an amalgamation which did not outlast her life. The kingdoms of Norway and Denmark remained united down to the nineteenth century; but Sweden, refusing to accept the German dynasty that was established in them after the death of Margaret, seceded from the union and set up a distinct king for herself, her independence being confirmed by Gustavus Vasa in 1523. The Protestant religion was introduced into Sweden during the reign of this prince, who also succeeded in laying the foundation of that greatness which the country was able shortly after to attain. His grandson Gustavus Adolphus raised the martial glory of the Swedes to a point to which they had never before aspired. He was in-

Digitized by Google

vited by the Protestant princes of Germany to place himself at their head and oppose the scheme of Austria to restore the supremacy of the Pope over Christendom; and his career of glory fully justified the choice. He fell at the battle of Lützen; but the statesmen and generals brought up in his school were quite able to sustain the success he had secured, till the Thirty Years' War was terminated by the peace of Westphalia, from which period Sweden, from being an obscure state in Europe, assumed a foremost place.

The reign of Charles X. was also glorious, though he was obliged to relinquish many of his conquests by a confederacy formed against him by Denmark, Russia, and Germany: it was the madness of Charles XII. that plunged Sweden neck-deep into ruin. The military talents of this latter sovereign were of the highest order, and he led his people to a succession of triumphs by crushing his enemies with a rapidity which can only be compared with the conquests of Napoleon I. a hundred years later. But becoming intoxicated with success he determined to conquer Russia, which caused the destruction of his splendid army at Pultowa, and shattered the national power. After his death the Swedish crown became elective, but was again made hereditary under Charles XIII.; and on his dying without heirs, Marshal Bernadotte, one of the ablest generals of the French Republic, was chosen to succeed him. In 1812 the Swedes under Bernadotte joined the coalition against Napoleon, and did good service during the campaign of 1813-14, which was rewarded at the general pacification of Europe by the gift of Norway wrested from Denmark. The glorious eras of Gustavus Vasa and Gustavus Adolphus have never been renewed

Digitized by Google

in their country; but its resources have since been largely developed, and the condition of the people greatly ameliorated; and more peace and prosperity have been enjoyed under the dynasty of Bernadotte than at any previous period. The present government is monarchical, but controlled by a diet composed of four classes—the nobility, the clergy, burgesses, and peasants. The religion is Protestant; great attention all over the country is paid to the education of the people; and the press is free. The intellect of the nation has been vindicated by the names of Puffendorf, Tycho Brahe, Linnæus, Berzelius, Geyer, and many others equally distinguished. In most of the large towns there are extensive libraries; and there are also first-class literary and scientific societies in the country, though of very unostentatious character.

The history of Denmark makes little noise in Europe after the reign of Margaret Waldemar. In 1448 a German dynasty was established on the throne in the person of Christian I., when Sleswig and Holstein were annexed to Denmark. We all know how violently they have since been disunited from her. But perhaps the greatest injury she has received from any power was that inflicted on her by England in 1807, when the Danish fleet was destroyed by Nelson to prevent its falling into the hands of Bonaparte. It was after that that Norway was forcibly wrested from her to be given away to Sweden, which completed her reduction and humiliation. Notwithstanding these inflictions, the national spirit in Denmark has been reawakened; and if England will only make amends for the past and countenance the Danes with her support, they may yet establish a name and consolidate their power in

Digitized by Google

the future, the opportunity for which may shortly arise. The government of Denmark is monarchical —with provincial and common states which assemble to advise the Crown. The people are simple-minded, contented, and honest. Nowhere has more been done for the extension of popular education. The authors of Denmark also occupy an honourable position.

Norway has no history apart from the history of Denmark and Sweden. Oscar I. gave the Norwegians a separate flag, and also decreed that in all acts and public documents relating to Norway the king shall be called King of Norway and Sweden, and not of Sweden and Norway, as was previously the practice; and with these concessions the Norwegians seem to be well satisfied. The rights of the king and people have been clearly defined since 1814, or the time of annexation with Sweden. The Storthing, an elective assembly, represents the governed in the constitution of their country. It has two houses, the upper and the common, the latter of which initiates all enactments. There is no hereditary nobility in Norway. The religion is Protestant, and remains exactly in the same state it was in when Catholicism was subverted by Luther. The education of the people is not of a high standard; but it is rare to find any one in Norway who is not able to read and write. The people are very hospitable; and they are, as a rule, very partial to agricultural pursuits.

Holland and Belgium.

The next states to notice, as we run downwards, are Holland and Belgium, known in the past by the name of the Netherlands, from their situation at the

Digitized by Google

mouths of the Rhine, the Meuse, and the Scheldt, and from their being protected by dykes and embankments from the sea. They were originally occupied by the Celts, being afterwards acquired by the Franks and the Saxons, the latter of whom formed the bulk of the population in the maritime provinces. In the time of Charlemagne the whole territory was annexed to France, but afterwards became independent under its several chiefs, known as the Counts of Flanders, Hainault, Brabant, and Holland, at about the same time that the Germans elected a separate emperor for themselves. The states very early grew wealthy by trade. The swampy and unproductive nature of their soil led the inhabitants to collect into cities for mutual assistance, and these acquired power and privileges which very much increased their importance. The principal cities were Bruges, Ghent, Brussels, Antwerp, and Liege; and also Leyden and Amsterdam, which were of later growth. Many efforts were made to suppress them, but they were generally unsuccessful.

In the fourteenth century, Philip, duke of Burgundy, became possessed of the entire territory, partly by conquest and partly by inheritance; and from the house of Burgundy it was transferred to that of Austria on the marriage of Mary, the daughter of Charles the Bold, with Maximilian, who became emperor of Germany in 1493. In the time of Charles V. the states were in a very flourishing condition, and the great towns were the chief marts of northern Europe. They were also the centres of civilisation in that age, excelling not only in manufactures, but also in literature and the arts. The paintings of the Flemish schools were particularly celebrated; and societies for the cultivation of poetry were formed

Digitized by Google

in every town. The Reformation also made extensive progress in them, which gave particular offence to Philip when he obtained the Netherlands in succession to Charles. He disliked both the people and their new faith, and determining to suppress both, sent the duke of Alva as governor, with a large army to carry out his intentions. The cruelties perpetrated by Alva were execrable: the Inquisition was established by him to enforce the Catholic religion, and 18,000 prisoners were delivered over to the executioner, within a space of six years, for daring to resist its authority. The severity of his measures, however, defeated the end held in view by him. The people were exasperated, and made a desperate opposition, which was headed by the dukes of Egmont and Horn, and the prince of Orange. First Holland, and then Zealand, cast off the Spanish yoke; and by 1579 a union was effected by seven provinces—namely, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Friesland, Groningen, Overyssel, and Guelderland, under the designation of the Seven United Provinces—and their sovereignty offered first to Elizabeth of England, and, on her refusing it, to the duke of Anjou. The war with Spain was in the mean time continued with great spirit, and in the prosecution of it the states were vigorously assisted by the English; till, after a contest of thirty-seven years, Spain was obliged to acknowledge their independence in 1609, when they accepted the government of a Council of Deputies, with a chief or Stadtholder at its head to exercise the executive power.

During the conflict with Spain the United Provinces increased greatly in wealth, acquired extensive provinces in the East, and formed a strong navy. They continued, however, to be internally disturbed

Digitized by Google

by religious dissensions, and externally from having sided with France in her wars with Spain. They also got involved in disputes with England in connection with the commercial enterprises carried on by both in the East; and it was in prosecution of this war that a Dutch fleet sailed up the Thames and burned several ships of war at Chatham. The ambition of Louis XIV. subsequently set the whole of Europe ablaze, closing all minor differences for the time; and the Dutch, his immediate neighbours, were so hard pressed by him, that they prepared at one time to leave their country and settle in their possessions in the East. This was rendered unnecessary by the valour and ability of their Stadtholder, William of Orange, afterwards king of England; and, on his accession to the English throne, the Dutch were combined with the English, and fought together till the power of Louis was annihilated.

All this time the western provinces of the Netherlands, which had retained the Catholic religion, had remained under the allegiance of Spain. They were transferred to the house of Austria by the peace of Utrecht in 1713, being afterwards annexed to France during the wars of the Revolution, when Holland, under the name of the Batavian Republic, declared herself to be the inseparable ally of France. In the time of Napoleon I. the Republic was first changed into a monarchy under his brother Louis, and afterwards, on Louis's abdication, annexed to France. The United Provinces were thus wholly ruined, till, after the fall of Napoleon, the whole of the Netherlands were again formed into one state by the allies, and placed under the king of Holland, with the title of the king of Belgium. The object of this arrange-

Digitized by Google

ment was the formation of a solid bulwark against the ambition of France. But the elements put together were heterogeneous and did not combine, which gave rise to a conflict of interests, and, expelling the Dutch from their country, the Belgians became independent in 1830. The two divisions of the Netherlands have since remained distinct. The people of both are famed for their great perseverance and mercantile good faith, but they do not cut any important figure now in the history of the world. Both Holland and Belgium have, however, copied the English system of government best—better than any other country in Europe with the exception of Italy; and this may in time raise them somewhat in the scale of nations.

Switzerland.

Switzerland is the centre of the high Alps lying between the confines of Germany, France, and Italy, where the largest rivers of Europe take their rise, and where inaccessible valleys are surrounded by rocks which render the place impregnable by nature. This country was known to ancient Rome as the home of the Helvetians; and, in the later migration of nations, was overrun by the Alemanni, the Burgundians, and the Longobards. These three races were afterwards united under the sceptre of France; and, on the division of the French monarchy, Switzerland became a part of the kingdom of Burgundy. According to the prevailing system of the times, it was broken up under the feudal law into a number of petty baronies, amidst which several free towns enjoyed political consideration, especially those in

Digitized by Google

the bosom of the mountains, which were called forest cities, and known by the names of Schwytz, Uri, and Unterwalden.

The most powerful of the Swiss barons were the counts of Hapsburg; and when one of them, Rodolph, was elected emperor of Germany, the greater part of Switzerland owned allegiance to him, and in that way became a part of the possessions of Austria, which Rodolph acquired as the distinct appanage of his family. This eventually led to the entire separation and independence of Switzerland. Albert, the son of Rodolph, not content with the possession of that portion of Switzerland which had voluntarily gone over to Germany, tried to force the forest cantons also to obedience, and placed over them tyrannical governors, who by their oppressions drove the people to rebellion. The story of Tell and Gesler's hat has been referred to. The first to renounce the authority of Austria were the cantons of Uri, Schwytz, and Unterwalden. They were afterwards joined by the cantons of Lucerne, Zurich, Berne, Zug, Glaris, Friburg, Soleure, Basle, Schaffhausen, and Appenzel. Leopold, the son of Albert, attempting to re-enforce their submission at the head of an army, was defeated with great slaughter at Morgarten, after which the independence of Switzerland was recognised.

The arrogant pretensions of Hagenbach, the Burgundian governor of Alsace, involved the Swiss subsequently in a war with Charles the Bold. But a proud consciousness of their power and liberty made the mountaineers more than a match for that leader of armies, who was thrice signally defeated by them at Granson, Murten, and Nancy, in the last of which engagements he was killed, after which his domin-

Digitized by Google

ions were dismembered. Two further attempts to reduce the Swiss were made by the house of Austria in 1386 and 1389, the first of which was defeated by the battle of Sempach—one of the most glorious in the records of liberty—and the second, by the battle of Næfels. Austria, humbled by these reverses, sold off her estates in Switzerland to the Swiss, after which the confederated states began to develop themselves fully, till quarrels arose among themselves. In one of these the French, siding with the state of Zurich against the rest, were signally defeated near St James on the Birs, their success leaving the mountaineers for some time at peace, from which they benefited largely. During the revolutionary wars Switzerland was invaded and occupied by the French in 1798, her old constitution subverted, and a new constitution given to her with the title of the Helvetic Republic. Next, Bonaparte made her a province of France; but she regained her independence on the occupation of Paris by the Allies, and resumed her former system of government.

Since then Switzerland has well cultivated the arts of peace. Her practical improvements in the culture of the soil have been only surpassed by her improvements in the culture of the mind. The learned establishments in Switzerland are many, and are respected throughout all Europe. The national religion is Protestantism, as it was understood and expounded by Zwingle; but in some places, especially in Geneva, the prevalent faith is that of Calvin. The national character has also improved. The system of sending out the youths of the country as mercenaries into foreign service, obtained for a long time after the defensive wars were terminated, and

Digitized by Google

almost made the terms "Swiss" and "hireling" synonymous. The masses of the people have now awakened to higher and better directed aspirations. Invention and enterprise have opened out new paths of advancement to them, and the progress of industry has been very considerable. The government is republican, each canton being represented by its own deputies; and in some respects the form is better—that is, less open to corruption—than that of the United States.

Spain.

We now come to the southern provinces of Europe, and commence with Spain and Portugal, which outflank the continent on the west. Spain was originally inhabited by the Celts and the Iberians, who were conquered by the Carthaginians, from whom the country was taken by the Romans. On the destruction of the Roman Empire it was overrun by the Vandals, the Suevi, and the Alans, and finally by the Visigoths, who settled in it in 410, and embraced the Catholic faith. The first monarch of all Spain was Leuvigild. A large portion of the history of the period is made up of usurpations and murders; but the kingdom was for a long time free from foreign warfare, which contributed largely to its internal weakness. In the reign of Roderick, an usurper, Count Julian, governor of Ceuta and Andalusia, who sided with the rightful heirs, and had an injury of his own—the violation of his daughter by Roderick—to avenge, invited over the Arabs from Africa. The invaders were led by Tarik, after whom Gibraltar—or the rock of Tarik—is named; and they defeated Roderick, who was drowned in the Guadal-

Digitized by Google

quiver. Tarik then passed through the country, which submitted to him without resistance, and he did not stop till he beheld the Bay of Biscay. His chief in Africa, Musa, came over next, and completed the subjugation of the rest of the kingdom, with the exception of Asturias, where a valiant remnant of the Goths defended themselves under Pelayo, against the Arabian power.

The first Arab governors of Spain were officers of the Kaliphs of Bagdad, of the house of Ommiyah; and one of these passed the Pyrenees and penetrated into France, which he actually conquered from the Garonne to the Rhone, but whence he was subsequently expelled by Charles Martel, and killed in his flight. When the Ommiyade Kaliphs were deposed, one member of the family, Abderrahman, escaping from Africa into Spain, was proclaimed Kaliph in 755. His descendants ruled in Spain for nearly two centuries; and when all Europe was sunk in darkness, they patronised the sciences and the arts, and diffused civilisation and refinement from the headquarters they had established. The internal disputes of the Arabs were the only cause of their decline. The emirs, rebelling against the authority of the kings, established little independent kingdoms for themselves, which diminished the royal power; and the Christians of Asturias, taking advantage of their disputes, gradually extended their possessions from the mountains to the plains. The kingdoms thus formed were Leon, Castile, Arragon, Catalonia, and Navarre. For a long time, however, the Moors were able, with constant reinforcements from Africa, to retain possession of the rest of the country—that is, all to the south of the mountains of Castile.

The wars between the Christians and the Moors

Digitized by Google

excited in both parties the lofty and chivalrous spirit for which the residents of Spain were for a long time famous. Gradually the Christian states gained ground while the Mahomedan states lost it, till by the middle of the thirteenth century the Moors were limited to Granada and Murcia, which they were able to retain mainly from the mutual wars and jealousies of the Christians. This continued to the end of the fifteenth century, when, Ferdinand of Arragon having married Isabella, queen of Castile, those two monarchies were united into one kingdom, which began gradually to absorb the other states. Navarre only passed continually by females to France, notwithstanding which, a great portion of it was annexed to Arragon.

It was during the reign of Ferdinand and Isabella that Granada was taken after ten years of incessant warfare, which finally closed a conflict of eight centuries, and obtained for Ferdinand the title of the Father of the Spanish monarchy. The era was also famous for the discovery of America by Columbus, through the patronage of Isabella. But simultaneous with these achievements was the establishment of the Inquisition in Castile, a tribunal which sat in secret upon all persons suspected of disbelieving the Roman Catholic religion, and which first directed its operation against the Jews. It was the erection of this tribunal, and the close connection it maintained with the throne, that contributed most to the decline of Spain. In the reign of Charles V. of Germany and I. of Spain, Cortes and Pizarro conquered the empires of Mexico and Peru with a degree of heroism and cruelty which were equally astounding, both of which very soon reacted on the national character, by raising it in one direction and degrading it in another.

Digitized by Google

The successor of Charles on the Spanish throne was Philip II., who sent the invincible Armada against England, and spent much blood and treasure in supporting the Catholics of France. In his reign the Netherlands were lost to Spain, and also most of the Spanish possessions in the East. His successor, Philip III., expelled the Moriscoes, or Mahomedan population, from Spain, by which a million of very industrious subjects were lost. In the reign of Philip IV. the Catalans rebelled—the Portuguese, who had been united with the Spaniards in the reign of Philip II., threw off the Spanish yoke—and the independence of the Netherlands had to be acknowledged. The decline of Spain from this time was rapid; the rust had already commenced to corrode her power.

The death of Charles II. without issue in 1701, gave rise to the war of the Spanish succession, which was continued for twelve years. Charles had bequeathed the crown to Philip of Anjou, the second son of the dauphin of France and great-grandson of Louis XIV.; but this arrangement was disputed by Leopold, emperor of Austria, who, as grandson of Philip III., claimed the crown on behalf of his son Charles. England and Holland supported the claim of Leopold, being averse to the further aggrandisement of France; and the wars of the allies, conducted under the lead of Marlborough and Eugene, were successful alike in Italy, Germany, and France. But, as the people of Spain refused to accept Charles for their king, the cause of Philip of Anjou was eventually triumphant.

The wars of the French Revolution did not disturb Spain much, Charles IV. having early made peace with France on his troops being defeated. But the

Digitized by Google

Spanish nation hated the French, and this gave rise to quarrels between Charles and his son Ferdinand, who took the popular side. Napoleon I., becoming cognisant of these family dissensions, undertook to mediate between father and son, and getting them both in his power, put them in confinement, while he sent troops to occupy Spain, which caused a general rising of the nation against him. Bonaparte made his brother Joseph king of the country; but his authority was nowhere acknowledged except in the presence of the French armies. For some time the Spaniards fought well; but, subsequently, Napoleon succeeded in crushing down their resistance. It was then that the English stepped forward to sustain the Spanish cause. The British army, which had operated successfully in Portugal, marched thence to Spain; and Wellington being placed at the head of the allied forces, the French were repeatedly defeated, and compelled to evacuate the peninsula. Spain thus owed her deliverance entirely to the assistance she received from Britain; but in Spanish history it is deliberately recorded that the Spaniards drove out the French, and were aided by the English!

Ferdinand VII. was restored to the throne after the victories of Wellington, and re-established the government on a despotic footing, reviving the Inquisition, and dismissing the Cortes. From the earliest times the government of Spain was a mixed monarchy; and a popular assembly called the Cortes, which was composed of the nobles and deputies from the cities, controlled the king. But Charles V. (I. of Spain) and his successors, aspiring to absolute power, removed this check upon their authority, and Ferdinand decided to follow that course. He was succeeded by his daughter Isabella II., then a minor,

Digitized by Google

whose reign was much disturbed by the pretensions of Don Carlos, a nephew of Ferdinand, who contended that Isabella's claim was barred by *salique* law. Against him was formed the Quadruple Alliance, whereby England, France, Spain, and Portugal bound themselves to secure the throne of Spain to the daughter of Ferdinand and her line to the exclusion of Don Carlos and his heirs, and the throne of Portugal to the female line of the house of Braganza to the exclusion of Don Miguel and his heirs; the result of which was the overthrow of Don Carlos in Spain. The subsequent bad conduct of Isabella, after she came of age and was married, gave great offence to her people, and obliged her to seek safety by flight into France, upon which the kingdom was first offered to Prince Amadeus of Savoy, and then placed under a republican form of government, which was recognised by the Great Powers. The Carlist movement having also revived, the country was much disturbed by civil wars, which have not yet terminated. A new revolution has since placed Alphonso XII., the son of Isabella, on the throne; but the Carlists have not yet ceased to give trouble. The present pretender who heads that party and calls himself Carlos VII., is the son of Juan, the son of Don Carlos. His cause is mainly upheld by the priests; but the people, who detest the domination of priestcraft, are exceedingly averse to it.

At one time the Spaniards were the greatest people in Europe; but they have long, very long, descended from that height, and are now about the most ignorant and depraved. The splendour and activity of the reign of Charles I. was very favourable to literary exertions, and a number of eminent writers flourished in that and the following reigns, among whom were

Digitized by Google

Calderon, Lope de Vega, and Cervantes; but her subsequent administrations have not been equally favourable either to letters or to greatness in any shape. The forms of a free government are aped both in Spain and Portugal; but, in the absence of a real spirit of freedom in the nation, they work only as instruments of arbitrary power.

Portugal.

Previous to the eleventh century, Portugal, anciently called Lusitania, formed a part of Spain, and with it passed successively under the domination of the Romans, the Suevi, the Goths, and the Arabs. In 1085, Alphonso VI., king of Castile, captured from the Arabs the ancient city of Toledo, knights from all countries of Christendom participating in the conquest. Particular distinction was won on the occasion by Henry, a young knight of Burgundy, who was rewarded for the service by the hand of a daughter of Alphonso, and the government of all the country lying between the mouths of the Duero and the Tagus. This territory Henry increased still further by conquests from the infidels, among which was the city of Porto, after which the entire province was named Portugal. Alphonso, the son of Henry, fought with a success greater even than that of his father; and, conquering the large and fertile province of Alentejo, was by his victorious army saluted "king" on the field of battle, from which time Portugal became a distinct kingdom, which Alphonso consolidated by wise institutions and laws.

The descendants of Alphonso I. reigned in uninterrupted succession till the time of Alphonso III., who was compelled by Alphonso X. of Castile to

Digitized by Google

attend him in his wars with fifty lances. This mark of dependence was afterwards dropped in the reign of Dionysius the Wise, when the country was further aggrandised. It was aggrandised still more under Pedro I., an able, just, and vigorous ruler, who nevertheless obtained a bad name for contending against the powers of the Church, which he greatly reduced. His successor, Ferdinand, left an only daughter married to John, king of Castile, who claimed the succession on behalf of his wife. Most of the grandees of the country favoured his claim; but the people were more mindful of national liberty, and elected in preference John, a natural son of Pedro, who, defeating the Castilian army, reigned for forty-eight years, justifying the choice of his subjects by rendering that period the most brilliant that Portugal had yet witnessed. It was in his reign that the Portuguese crossed the Straits of Gibraltar and conquered Ceuta from the Moors. More glorious still, the great voyages of discovery were now commenced, principally under the direction of the king's son Henry, who was much attached to the study of navigation and geography. Madeira and the Azores were in consequence occupied and added to his dominions, and the coast of Africa was explored.

Alphonso V. conquered Tangiers from the Moors. In the reign of John II. settlements were made on the Gold Coast of Africa, and the Cape of Good Hope was discovered and doubled by Diaz. Then followed the golden but guilty period of Emanuel, when Vasco de Gama proceeded to the East Indies, and, after him, Alphonso Albuquerque, and forced the native states there to acknowledge the supremacy of Portugal, which brought little advantage to them, while it saddled them with the thraldom of a bigoted

Digitized by Google

intolerance that proceeded so far as to establish the Inquisition at Goa. The places landed at, and where settlements were formed, were Ormus, Goa, Calicut, Cochin, Canara, Malabar, Malacca, and Macao; and for more than half a century these possessions were maintained with full vigour, which promoted commerce, but at the cost of an oppression and rapacity that no subsequent adventurers from the West ever ventured to emulate.

The Inquisition was introduced into Portugal and her dependencies during the reign of John III., which was in other respects as illustrious as that of his father Emanuel. This was the commencement of Portugal's decline. The Jesuits educated Sebastian, the grandson of John, who remained obedient to them after he came to the throne, whereby the priestly and regal authorities were made to combine for the oppression and degradation of the people. At the suggestion of the Jesuits, Sebastian undertook a crusade against the Moors in Africa, and being defeated by them, disappeared—being supposed by some to have been buried under the slain, and by others to have escaped into the wilderness. His uncle, Cardinal Henry, succeeded him, but, dying shortly after, the succession was claimed and usurped by Philip II. of Spain, a son of Isabella, the eldest daughter of Emanuel.

This arrangement was most unfortunate for Portugal, as in consequence of it all the enemies of Spain became her enemies also. Her possessions in the East were now wrested from her by the Dutch and the English; the Shah of Persia resumed possession of Ormus; and the merchandise of Portugal was waylaid on the high seas and captured. Simultaneously with these disasters, an odious and oppres-

Digitized by Google

sive government was introduced into Portugal by the king of Spain, accompanied by the usual abuses and severities of foreign domination, among which was the bestowal of all the most important and lucrative offices of the state on Spaniards alone. This continued for sixty years, after which the Portuguese, unable to bear the yoke longer, threw it off in 1640, during the reign of Philip IV. of Spain, electing John duke of Braganza, descended from the former royal family of Portugal, as their king.

The independence of Portugal was thus regained; but her power had already considerably declined, and she was never able to reassert it. In 1755, Lisbon, the capital of the country, was nearly destroyed by an earthquake, in which 50,000 persons are supposed to have perished; but in the greater earthquake of the French Revolution, which followed forty years after, Portugal was not involved. Her respite, however, terminated as soon as Napoleon I. stepped to the foreground, when the country was occupied by a French army, in the reign of Maria Francesca, an imbecile, upon which the regent, being unable to resist the invaders, sailed off with the whole Court to Rio Janeiro, an important Portuguese settlement in South America. A protective alliance had long subsisted between England and Portugal, and it now gave rise to the interference of the English in the affairs of both Portugal and Spain, which led to their being saved. A British force sent to Portugal compelled the French to fall back into Spain, and the British and Portuguese pursuing them thither contributed chiefly to their expulsion from the entire peninsula. The Portuguese Court, however, did not return to Lisbon till 1821, when John VI. reoccu-

Digitized by Google

pied its throne, leaving his son Pedro on the throne of Brazil, which became a distinct sovereignty.

On the death of John, Maria, the daughter of the emperor of Brazil, was, in acknowledgment of his right, proclaimed queen; but Don Miguel, another son of John, who had risen against him during the latter part of his reign and was put down by him, again came forward, and dismissing the Cortes, got himself proclaimed absolute king. The cause of Maria was, on the other hand, supported by her father the emperor of Brazil, who, coming over in person, succeeded in deposing Miguel, and in restoring his daughter to her throne. For a long period after, however, the peace of Portugal was disturbed by the obstinacy and caprices of the young queen, which soon lost her the affections of her people. She was only able to retain her seat on the throne by agreeing to a new constitution framed in 1838 in compliance with the popular demand. Her successor, Louis I., the present king, ascended the throne in 1861.

The government of Portugal is a hereditary monarchy, aided by a Cortes; but the people are ignorant and bigoted, and the nobility not more enlightened, and neither the one nor the other appreciates or is fit for a government really free. Correct and liberal views of policy are entertained by a small section—that is, the educated portion of the middle class; but they have not the power to enforce any change against the feelings of the mass, and the population at large are not very desirous of improvement. The religion of Portugal is Catholicism. In letters she has made no name; but she gave birth to Camoens.

Digitized by Google

Italy.

Of Italy we shall not attempt to say much. The dissolution of the Roman Empire was an event of ancient history which does not require any notice here. The reconquest of Italy for Justinian was accomplished by Belisarius and Narses, the latter of whom, having defeated the Ostrogoths, governed the country in the name of the emperor, till, becoming disgusted with the treatment he received from him, he sold the kingdom to the Lombards in 568. The country was thereupon inundated by the invaders, who established themselves easily in every part of it except Ravenna and Rome, which continued to be held for the Byzantine emperor, the former by his exarch or governor, and the latter by the bishop of Rome. In the course of time Ravenna was reduced; but Rome, though frequently menaced, still held out, and was once saved by the intervention of Pepin, and again by that of Charlemagne, by whom the kingdom of Lombardy was overturned.

The authority of the pontiffs in Italy dates thus from the days of Pepin, by whom the city and surrounding country were given to the Pope, who, previous to that time, had simply acted as bishop of Rome, and was subject to the emperor of Constantinople. The breach between the popes and the emperors began after this to widen; and in 782, Pope Gregory II., being dissatisfied with certain orders of the emperor Leo regarding the worship of images, threw off his dependence on him, and, founding his power on the choice of the people, arrogated sacerdotal dominion all over Europe, and soon came

Digitized by Google

to be acknowledged as the head of the Church. The virtues of many of the first popes rendered them worthy of the authority thus exercised, and some such authority was certainly necessary at that age for the propagation of the Gospel.

The descendants of Charlemagne were not able to retain their supremacy in Italy long; and the great vassals of the empire succeeded, therefore, in making themselves virtually independent. Of these the principal were the dukes of Benevento, Tuscany, and Spoleto; the marquises of Ivrea, Susa, and Friuli, and the princes of Salerno and Capua,—besides whom, the catapan of the Eastern emperors governed Apulia and Calabria, his authority being also acknowledged by the republics of Amalfi and Naples, while the Pope ruled over the turbulent people of Rome. The contentions among these for supreme authority were frequent; and, when Berenger II. of Ivrea nearly succeeded in attaining it, the other competitors invited the aid of Otho the Great of Germany, and the German monarchs thenceforth became the kings of Italy.

In the eleventh century the Normans invaded Italy and conquered Apulia, Calabria, and the island of Sicily, and the confusion created thereby helped very much to augment the pretensions of the popes. The ignominy to which Henry IV. of Germany was obliged to submit has been noticed elsewhere; and it has also been stated that his son, Henry V., was obliged to renounce the right of investing bishops with the ring and the crosier, being only allowed to confer temporalities on them by the sceptre. What still kept open the quarrel between the two parties was, that the election of the pope required the emperor's confirmation, and the election of the emperor

Digitized by Google

the consecration of the Vatican—the first having been assumed as an imperial, and the second as a spiritual privilege, both from the time of Charlemagne.

In the twelfth century several free cities arose in power in Italy, and established an independent and republican form of government, the chief of them being Milan, Pavia, Verona, Padua, Pisa, Florence, Genoa, and Venice; and as these took up warmly the perpetual disputes which were raging between the emperors and the popes, their mutual wars and animosities were incessant. At last the dispute with the emperors was ended by the edict of Frankfort denying the right of the pope to interfere in imperial elections; and, in the same vein, the popes, from the time of Gregory VII., never condescended to seek for imperial confirmation. The superiority of the papal over the royal power lay in this, that the arms employed by the Pontiff were excommunication and interdict, the operation of which on the minds of the superstitious was unfailing, to which the temporal arms of the emperors could offer no sufficient resistance.

In the thirteenth century the republics in Italy were numerous and independent; and several of them rose to great opulence and power. But most of these were soon after reduced under the rule of their *signora* or tyrants, and began rapidly to decline; while Genoa and Venice, which retained their republican form, continued in their career of industry and greatness, carrying on an extensive and lucrative commerce, which was only diverted from them on the discovery of an easier passage to the East round the Cape of Good Hope.

In the fourteenth century the Christian world was scandalised by the appearance of three or four rival

Digitized by Google

popes at one and the same time, and their quarrels with each other, which were terminated by the deposal of all the candidates by the Council of Pisa, and the election of a new pope—Martin V.—in 1414. These unseemly disturbances contributed much to lower the influence of the popes; the dissolute lives of the clergy also gave great offence; and the general education of the people contributed at the same time to lessen the fears of excommunications and interdicts; all which circumstances prepared silently the way for the Reformation.

In the sixteenth century the greater part of Italy became subject to Charles V., as king of Spain, after a protracted quarrel with France, which claimed several portions of it as fiefs of the Holy See, while the claim of Spain was based on inheritance from local sovereigns by female descent. From this period Italy began to languish; the trade of Venice and Genoa fell off, and most of the cities came to be governed by officers of German and Spanish origin, or by princes connected with the houses of Austria and Bourbon. She had no disturbances now to dread; but her ancient spirit had declined, and she sank fast in luxury, occupied in the enjoyment of her arts and natural advantages.

At the outbreak of the French Revolution the principal divisions of Italy were the principality of Savoy, the popedom, the republics of Genoa and Venice, the grand-duchy of Tuscany, and the small principalities of Parma and Modena. Naples and Sicily were governed by a king of the Bourbon line, while Mantua, Milan, and other places were in the possession of Austria. The French, under Bonaparte, invaded Italy in 1796, upon which the Austrians, being defeated, were obliged to relinquish

Digitized by Google

their possessions. On a renewal of the war in 1799, the Austrians, assisted by the Russians, were able to recover a great part of what had belonged to them, but were again deprived of them after the battle of Marengo. In 1805, Bonaparte was crowned king of the country, and Joseph and Murat were successively made king of Naples, while the pope, deprived of his temporal sovereignty, was conveyed to Paris.

On the downfall of Napoleon, the Congress of Vienna effected a redivision of the country, by which the papal territories were restored to the pope, and Naples and Sicily to their former king; Piedmont and Genoa, being united, were given to the king of Sardinia as the representative of the dukes of Savoy; and the rest of Italy, including Venice, was absorbed by Austria. But this arrangement did not satisfy the Italian states: it was no longer suited to the wants and genius of the people, who were all more or less in favour of an independent existence. Their impatience of a foreign yoke increased daily, and the unconciliating spirit in which Austria resumed her possessions revived the antipathy against her. In 1830, an Italian revolution was planned at Paris, which died out on receiving no support from the government of Louis Philippe; but in Italy itself the efforts of Mazzini continued gradually to strengthen the nucleus of discontent, and, in 1848, Charles Albert commenced the war of liberty and regeneration. He was defeated at Novara; but the people expelled the pope, and declared a republic, which, in its turn, was upset by the French, who re-established the pope, and left a garrison of 20,000 French troops in Italy for his protection. It was reserved for the latter days of Napoleon III. to take up the

Digitized by Google

right side of the contest; and on the fields of Magenta and Solferino the dream of a united Italy was realised. The constitution of Italy now is the best in Europe set up on the model of the English, and is about the closest imitation of it, the people having a more potential voice in the administration of their country than any other people on the Continent. The power of Italy, however, has not yet been fully consolidated, and much more of fighting may yet be necessary to secure that end, for which she is at this moment fully armed.

The name of Italy is dear to every reader of history, not only for the greatness of ancient Rome, but also for the part she has taken in the revival of letters and arts in Europe. Dante, Petrarch, Boccaccio, Ariosto, and Tasso, are names that will not easily be forgotten. Machiavelli and Guicciardini, as historians; Leonardo da Vinci, Raphael, Titian, and Michael Angelo, as painters; Galileo, as astronomer; and Lorenzo de Medici and Pope Leo X., as munificent patrons of arts and artists, learning and learned men,—will also long be remembered. But in later times the political condition of the country has not been equally favourable to intellectual development, and what Italy is now best known for are her musicians and opera-singers! May the changes being worked out in her restore her not only to a respectable political status, but also to her former position in the scale of literature, sciences, and the arts!

Turkey.

Turkey completes the *rôle* of European states that remained to be named. She is so called after the

Digitized by Google

Turks, formerly a fierce people, though they have become quite emasculated in modern times. The origin of the race was in the centre of Asia, where they worked in the iron-mines of the Altai under the Geugens or Tartars, till a bold leader (Bertezena) arose among them, who instructed them to make swords for themselves and achieve their freedom. Proceeding from the Altai, they inundated the countries to the west; and formed their first independent stronghold in the steppes still called Turkestan. The Arabs came in contact with them when, after overthrowing the Persian kingdom, they penetrated into the countries of the Oxus and the Jaxartes, for propagating the doctrines of Mahomet; and, finding the Turks to be possessed of as much strength and valour as they themselves were distinguished for, they took large bodies of them into their service, as guards for their kaliphs, by whom many coveted advantages were conferred on them, with a view to attach them more firmly to their interests. The faithfulness of the Turks, however, was but indifferently secured. The body-guards in time became insolent, while the favourites selected out of them and appointed governors of provinces declared their independence; and when the dynasty of the Abbassides was overthrown, the Turkish power arose upon the ruins of the Saracenic empire.

The Samanian dynasty was the first to succeed the Abbassides, and was, in its turn, displaced by the Seljukian dynasty. When the power of the Seljuks was subverted by the Moguls, the Turks formed several independent principalities of their own, among which was a settlement in Armenia, formed by one named Ortogrul. The son of Ortogrul was named Othman, who, on being elected chief of the Oguzian

Digitized by Google

Turks, proceeded in the direction of Phrygia, and taking Brusa from the Greek empire, laid the foundation of the Ottoman power. He accepted the Mahomedan religion, and proclaiming that he had a divine mission to propagate it, excited the fanaticism and valour of his troops, and obtained from them a blind and implicit obedience. He was thus able to subdue a great part of Lesser Asia, and consolidated his conquests by great bounty and liberality to his men of war and to the poor; and his son Orchan, following in his footsteps, was able to add largely to his territories, besides forming a strong force, known as the Janizaries (*Jan-nissaras*, or Life Guards), which did good service in his day, although it subsequently became very famous for revolts.

Amurath, the successor of Orchan, was first obliged to put down a combination of the Mahomedan princes of Asia against him; after which he turned his arms against Europe, and having passed over to Gallipoli with a powerful army, seized upon several important places in Thrace, terminating a series of victories by the reduction of Adrianople, to which the seat of his government was removed. The rapid decline of the Greek empire at this time subjected it to successive losses of territory, till the imperial power was fairly confined to the city of Constantinople and a part of Thrace and Bulgaria. But Amurath met with considerable opposition from a formidable confederacy of Slavonian tribes, which made a resolute stand against the common enemy, till, after a terrible conflict, they were completely overthrown.

A fierce and remorseless warrior, Bajazet, who well merited the surname of Ilderim, or the Lightning, which was assumed by him, succeeded Amurath, and defeated a Christian army of 60,000 men reinforced

Digitized by Google

by the noblest chivalry of Germany and France, and commanded by one of the greatest generals of the age, Sigismund, king of Hungary. But his Asiatic dominions being shortly after invaded by Timour-lung the Mogul, at the head of 800,000 men, Bajazet was defeated in his turn, and subjected to a cruel and humiliating bondage which he did not long survive; and this interrupted the progress of the Ottoman power in Europe for the time, giving a respite to the Greek empire, which continued to hold on for half a century longer.

For ten years after the death of Bajazet the Ottoman Empire was distracted by the pretensions of rival competitors for the throne, till it was assumed by Mahomed I., the youngest son of Bajazet, who consolidated his father's conquests, and successfully established his authority both in Europe and Asia, for which he was proclaimed to be the second founder of the empire. Amurath II., his son, inherited all the valour of his race; and the Greek emperor having set up a pretender to the throne, he proceeded against him, subdued a great part of the Byzantine territory, and defeated the Hungarians in a great battle at Varna. His successor, Mahomed II., pursuing the same course, besieged and captured Constantinople, which filled all Europe with consternation; and ever since that city has remained the capital of the Ottoman Empire.

Bajazet II. was killed by his son Selim I. The history of Turkey is so full of horrors of this nature that we cannot stop to notice them. As a ruler Selim signalised himself by adding Syria and Egypt to the empire, whereby he also derived from the last of the kaliphs the influence and authority which they had exercised over the followers of the Prophet. His

Digitized by Google

son, Solyman the Magnificent, repeatedly defeated the Hungarians and the Germans, acquiring several important places from them. He also took Rhodes from the Knights of St John, and otherwise obtained possession of most of the islands of the Mediterranean, of the towns of Tunis and Biserta in Africa, and of Bagdad. The island of Cyprus was reduced by his son Selim II., with whom accession of territory was closed. The fleet of Selim was destroyed at Lepanto by the combined fleets of Venice and Spain; and the princes who succeeded him were not able to repair the loss, being only known to fame for their murders and debaucheries within the harem, and for an imbecility which made the Janizaries insubordinate, and led to perpetual rebellions.

Under Mahomed IV. the power of Turkey became again for a moment formidable to Europe, chiefly from the abilities of his vizier Achmet Kiuprili, one of the ablest statesmen that Turkey or Europe has ever known. He took Candia from the Venetians, and made some conquests also from the Germans, Hungarians, and Poles. But fortune veered back with his death, and Sobieski, king of Poland, compelled the Turks, in 1683, to raise the siege of Vienna, and in 1687 they suffered another severe defeat in Hungary, which led to the deposition of Mahomed IV. After this the power of Turkey rapidly declined; and in 1699 she had to cede Transylvania to Austria, Azof to Russia, and Morea to the Venetians, the last of which was subsequently recovered.

The reign of Achmet III. was the era of the conflict of Charles XII. of Sweden with Peter the Great; and Achmet having given an asylum to the former after his defeat at Pultowa, was drawn into a war with Russia in which Peter was worsted, he being

Digitized by Google

only rescued from danger, as has been related in the preceding chapter, by the treaty of Pruth, which was negotiated by the impromptu diplomacy of his wife Catherine. Achmet was less successful in a war with Austria, by which he was compelled to relinquish Belgrade; and, being also defeated by Nadir Shah in Persia, the Janizaries rose up against him and deposed him. In the reigns which followed, the wars between Russia and Turkey were frequently repeated, and the latter was gradually compelled to relinquish all her possessions on the north coast of the Black Sea. Russia also assumed the right to protect the Christian princes of Moldavia and Wallachia; and on the Persian frontier Georgia and Armenia were lost.

There was no renovation for Turkey in subsequent reigns. In the reign of Selim III. peace with Russia was purchased by great sacrifices of territory, and Egypt was invaded by the French, who had to be expelled from it by the English. In that of Mahmood II. the Greeks fought for their independence, and secured it in 1828, after the destruction of the Ottoman fleet by a combined action on the part of Britain, France, and Russia. Later, a war with Russia broke out, in which the Turkish armies were uniformly defeated, and large concessions had to be made to prevent the occupation of Constantinople. On the other hand, Mahmood was able to carry out military reforms within the empire, by which the power of the Janizaries was broken; and many other changes were effected which facilitated the acquisition of European civilisation by his people.

The last years of Mahmood II. were disturbed by the defection of Egypt, where the viceroy, Mehemet Ali, aspired to independent sovereignty. The

Digitized by Google

dispute was terminated in the reign of Abdul Mejid, under the terms of a convention signed in London between England, Russia, Prussia, and Austria, by which the hereditary *pashalic* of Egypt was secured to the family of Mehemet Ali in subordination to the Porte. The tranquillity which followed this settlement was soon after disturbed by the desire of Russia to hasten the dissolution of the Turkish empire, on the pretext that some interference was necessary on behalf of the Christian communities located within it. This brought on the war of 1854, from which Turkey came out unscathed, on account of the support given to her by France, England, and Sardinia.

It is true, however, that the sick man is really sick; nay more, that he is utterly beyond all reasonable hopes of recovery, that no extraneous support will keep him up long. The vigour which led to the establishment of the empire has long ceased to exist. All the present strength of Turkey consists in the maintenance of armies and fleets commanded by European officers, but from which no real benefit can be derived in the absence of a strong backbone to rest upon. The government of the country is still an absolute despotism, which the influence of European civilisation has not modified to any considerable extent. Its religion is Mahomedanism according to the Soonie doctrines, and is yet bigotedly adhered to. Some reforms have certainly been made in the political organisation of the empire; but they have given it no vitality. No progress whatever has been made in the country in literature, the sciences, and the arts. The Russian *dictum* is therefore undoubtedly correct, that the existence of Turkey in Europe at this hour is an anomaly which ought to be rectified.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

THE INDEPENDENT STATES OF ASIA, AFRICA, AND AMERICA.

THE principal states of Asia, Africa, and America, other than those which we have noticed in the preceding chapters, now require to be mentioned.

China.

Commencing with the states in Asia, we first notice China, a country of the ancient world which has prolonged its existence to the present day. The territory appertaining to it is only inferior in geographical extent to that owned by Russia in Asia, while, on the other hand, it is much more productive and more thickly populated. Over a considerable portion of it, however, the superiority of China is merely nominal, several places in Tartary being virtually independent, as also is Thibet.

The modern history of China commences properly with the conquest of the country by the successors of Chingez Khan, previous to which period it was not much known to the nations of the West, except by doubtful report. In the thirteenth century it was visited by Marco Polo, the Venetian traveller, who repaired to it through Turkestan, and took

Digitized by Google

service under Kublai Khan, the greatest monarch of his day. The first European nation to visit it by sea were the Portuguese, and Xavier sailed for it with the benevolent intention of converting it to Christianity, but died while off the coast in 1552. In the commencement of the seventeenth century several Jesuits, Dominicans, Franciscans, and Capuchins entered the country, and at first their success in conversion was not inconsiderable, though the heart of the country was not then, as it is not even now, accessible to foreigners. All the attempts of the British government to open intercourse with China have been made mainly in connection with the opium trade; and only recently, after much fighting and negotiation, have some ports been opened to European traffic, and access given to Pekin.

The population of China proper is estimated at above three hundred millions, and has from time immemorial enjoyed a name for diligence. The cultivation of the earth is particularly prized, but no branch of art or industry is neglected. The consequence is that China produces everything that she requires for her own use; and it is well known that her manufactures are not much, if at all, inferior to those produced in Europe. In the construction and use of firearms, in printing and engraving, in the manufacture of silk, cotton cloths, and earthenware, the Chinese have always taken the lead; and in the three last they do not yield the palm of superiority even now to any nation. But, unfortunately, Chinese civilisation is stereotyped and cannot improve, which is strange, considering that the imitative power of the people, as in all oriental countries, is very strong. Set anything before a Chinese workman, and he will readily produce an exact duplicate, although the

Digitized by Google

tools he uses are few and clumsy as compared with those used by European artificers. Why, under such circumstances, China should not be able to follow in the wake of the nations of Europe is inexplicable, except by the inference that she will not condescend even to imitate. What China is best known to European nations for is her tea, which, grown elsewhere, never acquires the same flavour and quality.

The condition of the Chinese people is very low. The power of the emperor is supreme, superior even to the laws. He is also the sole proprietor of the soil, which is let out to landholders, and through them underlet to tenants. In former times the government was patriarchal; but that phase of it has long disappeared, every sort of oppression having since been gradually introduced. The mandarins, imitating the sovereign, are extremely tyrannical, and arrogate as much power under him as he arrogates over them; and the example is followed step by step to the lowest grade of officialism. The general religion of the country is Buddhism; but it has been correctly asserted that the worship of the emperor is the real religion of his subjects. All this testifies to a great demoralisation of the people; but there is nevertheless no doubt that China is yet the strongest power in Asia, England and Russia excepted. She has now got an army either commanded or guided by European officers, and armed with European rifles. She has conquered the Panthays, or Musselman insurgents on the south-west; is planning the conquest of Yarkand as a revolted province; every now and then threatens a demonstration in the direction of Nepal; and is not unanxious to measure swords with Cashmere. In the arts of peace her superiority is still more marked and decisive. She anticipated

Digitized by Google

Europe in many of the most important inventions, and the progress she made she has retained, though there has been no further advance for the last thousand years. It is doubtful, however, if this conservatism will last much longer, for railways and telegraph cables have already begun to be appreciated.

Japan.

The next state to notice is the island empire of Japan, or Zipangu, supposed by some authorities to be an offshoot of China, and by others of Tartary, which was first brought to the notice of Europe by Marco Polo. The annals of the country fix the foundation of its monarchy at some seven hundred years before the Christian era. The government is hereditary and theocratical, the emperor or *Mikado* being both king and high priest. The offices were separated in the sixteenth century, in the reign of Taiko Sama, who took to himself the title of *Koboe*, or lay emperor; and for a long time after Japan continued to have two emperors at one and the same time—namely, the *Mikado*, or ecclesiastical emperor, and the *Tycoon*, or secular emperor—the power of the second being subordinate to that of the first. In general acceptance the *Tycoon* was regarded as the *Mikado's* lieutenant, though actually he often exercised paramount authority, as most of the *Mikados* passed their lives in idleness and seclusion with concubines and flatterers. More recently the second post has been abolished, and the *Mikado* has at the same time thrown aside his seclusion and indifference.

The Portuguese opened European intercourse with

Digitized by Google

Japan by visiting it in 1542, and Xavier went to it eight years after. In 1600, a Dutch vessel was wrecked on the coast of one of the islands, on board of which was an Englishman named Adams, the first of his nation who landed in that country. He rose into great favour with the emperor, and invited first the Dutch and afterwards the English merchants to visit it. But the prospects of the Christians there were shortly after spoilt by the Portuguese, by an attempt they made in concert with the Japanese Christians to overturn the native empire and establish a Christian dynasty. An atrocious massacre of all Christians was the punishment meted out for the crime, and this was followed by a proclamation that no followers of that faith were thenceforth to be allowed to land in Japan, which the Dutch evaded by boldly asserting that they were Dutchmen and not Christians, which in that age was very near to the truth.

In 1811 the English took forcible possession of Java, Sumatra, and the other Dutch possessions in the East; but it was not till many years after that any attempt was made to reopen communication with Japan. An opportunity to do this was afforded in 1831, when a junk was blown off the coast into the Pacific Ocean, and, after drifting for a long time, was cast ashore in America at the mouth of the Columbia river, where the crew were taken care of by some Englishmen and Americans. To carry these people back to their country was the pretext on which an attempt to reopen intercourse was made; but the advances were repulsed, and the vessel, refused admittance in Japanese waters, was obliged to fall back to Macao. The persistence of the English and the Americans in their endeavours to

Digitized by Google

reopen a friendly intercourse with the country were eventually successful; and, since 1858, amicable treaties have been entered into under which, as in the case of China, certain of the Japanese ports have been made accessible to the treaty powers. Free intercourse between foreigners and the natives has not, however, even now been attained; but it is expected that shortly it will be.

The Japanese are decidedly the most forward nation in Asia, being more in advance than the Chinese. Their whole country has been revolutionised since the opening of communication with foreigners, whom they now imitate in almost everything. The government is, of course, still an absolute despotism, but one in which the despot is subject to a system of unchanging laws, besides which he has of late imposed many restrictions on himself in imitation of European states. He has his council and secretaries to assist him in giving effect to the laws; and for the government of the country at large he has vassal princes under him, each over a specified jurisdiction, and having his minister and secretary to assist him. The people, as is the case all over the East, have no rights or privileges, but they are full of new aspirations and ideas, which must in time fructify to their advantage. All classes are also very industrious, and for a long time there has been a fair share of civilisation and refinement even among the poorest. From the highest to the lowest every Japanese is sent to school; and it is said that there are more schools in the empire now than in any other country in the world, and that they have all been recently reorganised on the European model. The condition of the women, which some consider to be the best

Digitized by Google

test of civilisation, is also better in Japan than in any other Asiatic country.

Burmah.

Of the independent states between India and China, the principal are Burmah and Siam. The old history of Burmah is full of civil dissensions between the Burmese and the Peguans, which were very sanguinary. In 1750-52, the latter, with the assistance of the Portuguese, captured Ava, and annexed Burmah to Pegu. But this triumph was short-lived. The royal family of Burmah being unable to keep up the contest, it was warmly taken up by an adventurer, Alompraw, who, having defeated the Peguans, assumed the throne. He also took summary vengeance on the English and the French, who had established factories in Burmah, and always interfered in her civil feuds with a view to secure their own ends; and this ill faith of the foreigners was long remembered against them in the country, in which they were refused a footing.

In 1767, Burmah was invaded by a Chinese army of fifty thousand men; but the reigning king, Shempuan, was vigorous, and gave it such reception that not a man of the whole force ever returned to China. In 1794, a Burmese army of five thousand men crossed the British frontier and entered the district of Chittagong in pursuit of some refugees from Arracan, but retreated on being told to do so, when the delinquents were given up. This opened an intercourse between the English and the Burmese, which often became irritating on account of the constant flight of refugees from an ill-governed country, till

Digitized by Google

at last war broke out between the two governments in 1824. The ostensible grounds of the war were the disturbances in Cachar, the throne of which was contested—one claimant being upheld by the English, and the other by the king of Burmah. The Burmese fought well, at least the English generals said so—a common claptrap on the part of victors to secure greater praise to themselves. The war terminated by the acquisition of Arracan by the British government, the Burmese being at the same time expelled from Assam and Cachar. This is the origin of British Burmah, now governed by a British Chief Commissioner.

The government of Burmah is despotic; but the despotism is not unlimited, being subject to the influence of the priests. No king dares to treat the sacerdotal class with disrespect, as that would at once lead to the subversion of his throne. The rest of the people are of no account; but Mrs Judson describes them as being lively, industrious, and energetic, and more advanced in civilisation than other Eastern nations generally. The religion of the country is Buddhism; and of course caste, the great bugbear of India, is unknown. The country having now been fairly laid open, there is every chance of its gradual improvement, as it is not an old and effete state, nor too proud to learn.

Siam.

Like Burmah, Siam also was at the outset constantly involved in wars with Pegu. In the seventeenth century it had the misfortune to get a Christian—a Venetian nobleman named Phalcon—for prime minister, who concerted with the French the con-

Digitized by Google

version of the king and the establishment of a Gallic Indian empire in the East. But the Siamese nobles discovered the plot and defeated it, the minister being killed and the French expelled the country; and, as the king had been partial to his minister, the royal dynasty was changed. In 1821, steps were taken by the British government to open a friendly intercourse with Siam; but the special mission sent to secure that end was unsuccessful. Greater success was subsequently obtained on the acquisition of British Burmah, when the British and Siamese frontiers came to coalesce; and the intercourse thus opened has been so well cultivated that the present king of Siam visited the late Lord Mayo at Calcutta, a few years ago. His government is despotic, but more liberal than that of Burmah. He has now a state council and a privy council, a government gazette, and an official newspaper for the publication of articles on arts, sciences, and literature. The institutions of Europe are now being largely imitated in all parts of the world, but unfortunately without being much appreciated.

Persia.

Passing over India, which we have already noticed, we come to Persia, the modern history of which commences with its conquest by the Arabian kaliphs in 641, when all that was useful, grand, or sacred in that country was destroyed. A great portion of the conquered inhabitants in submitting to their new masters adopted the religion propagated by them, as affording the only means of securing equal rights with their conquerors; while the rest, self-banished, preserved their religion and manners in foreign

Digitized by Google

lands. These latter are the Parsees, the largest number of whom are located in the Bombay Presidency in India. Their country was held by the kaliphs for more than two centuries, the history of which period is only represented by petty revolts. Its possession was afterwards usurped by a leader of banditti—Yacoob-Ben-Leis, and then by the families of Samani and Dilemi, between whom the royal power was divided. These were succeeded by the Seljuks, of whom the greatest was Alp Arselan, the victor of Romanus Diogenes, the husband of the Empress Eudoxia. The tomb of Alp Arselan is at Merv, and bears the following motto: "O ye, who have seen the glory of Alp Arselan exalted to the heavens, repair to Merv and behold it buried in the dust!" The glory thus vaunted of was confined to military conquests only.

In the thirteenth century Persia was conquered by Halaku, a grandson of Chingez Khan, who captured and demolished Bagdad, and put to death the last kaliph of the house of Abbas. It was during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries that the most celebrated authors of Persia flourished; but this was also the period of the greatest distraction in the state, which was only terminated by the conquest of Timour-lung in 1384. The fourth son of Timour, Shah Rokh, was a distinguished patron of letters, as also was his son Ulugh Beg; but the supremacy of the family was of short continuance. In 1502, one Shah Ishmail made himself master of Persia, and founded the Suffanean dynasty, the greatest ornament of which was Shah Abbas, who was severe to his ministers and nobles, and barbarously cruel to his own family, but who promoted commerce, countenanced Christianity, and patronised literature and

Digitized by Google

the arts. In 1722, the Afghans under Mahmood conquered Persia, but were soon expelled by Nadir—the general of Tamasp, the rightful king—who also defeated the Russians and the Turks. Nadir was himself proclaimed king by the nobles in 1736, and greatly augmented the consequence of Persia by his conquests. But the affairs of the country fell again into confusion upon his being assassinated, and Ahmed Shah Doorani took that opportunity to establish a separate independent kingdom in Kabool. Since then the prestige of Persia has been still further reduced by her wars with Russia, by whom she has been dispossessed of all the provinces between the Black and the Caspian Sea.

The distraction of Persia, and its perpetual conquest by foreign invaders, have reduced the greatest empire of the ancient world to the extreme of weakness and imbecility. It now lies quite at the mercy of the Russians, who can occupy it when they choose. In all other respects the Persians may be, as they are described to be, the same as they were in the days of Darius and Noshirwan the Just; but their old martial character has become extinct, and fifty thousand Cossacks would now march through the country unopposed from one extremity to another, provided no European power came forward to interfere. Nadir Shah defeated the combined armies of Russia and Turkey in 1722; in 1922 it is doubtful if Persia will remain a distinct state. The government of the country is an absolute monarchy. The people have no rights of any sort. They are distinguished from other oriental races by a superior civilisation and by grosser morals. Their subjection to Russia would not be a disadvantage either to themselves or to their neighbours.

Digitized by Google

Arabia.

Arabia completes the Asiatic states that required to be mentioned. Its modern history opens with the advent of Mahomet for the high purpose of bringing the pagan Arabs to a knowledge of God. "The injustice of Mecca, and the choice of Medina," as Gibbon expresses it, "transformed the citizen into a prince, and the preacher into a leader of armies." The religion he preached was also purer than the Christianity of the age, and thus came to be rapidly and extensively propagated; and, as every country that accepted it accepted also the sovereignty of the kaliphs, the Arabian empire under the last of the Ommiyades extended from the confines of Tartary and India on the one side to the shores of the Atlantic on the other.

This extent of the empire, however, led to the consequence of Arabia itself being impaired. On the general massacre of the Ommiyades, the thrones of Egypt, Western Africa, and Spain became independent; while the seat of government of the remainder being established at Bagdad, Arabia was reduced to the rank of a province of the empire. In 1258, the metropolis of Islamism fell into the hands of Halaku, the grandson of Chingez; and, the last of the kaliphs being murdered by him, Arabia reverted to its former state of anarchy and confusion, being subdivided once more into a number of petty principalities ruled over by their respective sheiks and emirs.

In the eighteenth century an attempt to reunite the nations was made by a new prophet named Ab-

Digitized by Google

dool Wahab, who appeared in the province of Najd, and proclaimed his mission to be to correct the abuses which had crept into the Mahomedan religion, particularly in respect to the worship of saints and the use of spirituous liquors. His doctrines spread among the tribes of the East, so much so that the British government in the centre of India had to watch over the Wahabee movement that disturbed its repose. In Arabia itself, however, many of the sheiks refused to accept the innovations proposed, which were also rejected by the holy cities of Mecca and Medina; and, though they yet remain very powerful, universal dominion over all Arabia, which they aspired to, was never acquired by the Wahabees. The general sovereignty over Arabia is now claimed by the Pasha of Egypt on behalf of the Sultan of Turkey: but there are several chiefs scattered over the peninsula who are entirely independent; and the Bedouins remain unsubdued and unchangeable, hostile towards everybody crossing their path, and only momentarily amenable to authority when strongly backed by arms. These have never been civilised, and probably never will be. They live in tents, and move about from place to place, each family owning only a few sheep, goats, and horses, by which means they continue to support themselves. For the most part they live by plunder, and yet they are all highly contemplative, and religiously inclined. Of Arabia generally it may be correctly said, that towards the end of the nineteenth century it is in as barbarous a condition as any portion of the world; notwithstanding that the Arabs, in their days of greatness, contributed much to the civilisation of Europe.

Digitized by Google

The African States.

Very little can be said of the states of Africa, because very little is known of them. The chief divisions of the country are: (1) Moorish Africa, or the coast-land of the north; (2) Sahara, or the sandy desert; (3) the Nile districts, including Egypt, Nubia, and Abyssinia; (4) Negroland, East; (5) Negroland, West; (6) the Upper Western Coast; (7) the Lower Western Coast; (8) Southern Africa, including the Cape Colony; (9) the Eastern Coast, including Mozambique, Zanzibar, the island of Madagascar, &c.; and (10) the unexplored regions between the lower western coast and the eastern coast. Of these, the first and third divisions only have been well explored: the former as being nearest to Europe, to which it seeks to be attached; and the latter as the theatre of the vigorous researches which have been prosecuted of late throughout the entire region of the Nile. As to the rest, very small portions of them have as yet been opened out, and it will probably take a very long time to develop even those portions fully.

In a general way the continent may be divided into two main divisions—namely, the portions north and south of the Kong mountains and *Jebal al Komar*, which give rise to the Senegal and the Niger, and were long believed to give rise also to the Nile. All the countries to the north of this line are still ruled and partially occupied by foreign races of Arab descent, who took possession of them in remote times, driving the aboriginal population to the mountains and deserts in the interior. The countries to the south of the line are entirely peopled by the Negro race,

Digitized by Google

the extreme south only having been partially colonised by the English. The tribes scattered over such a vast extent of territory are of course very dissimilar to each other in their peculiarities. The habits of all of them are equally simple, but their characters vary between the extremes of mildness and ferocity, and they are so isolated from each other that they rarely come together except to fight. Towards the eastern coast the Negro features change for those of the Caffre race, and towards the south for those of the Betjouana and Hottentot races.

The west coast, which is Negroland throughout, was the first to come into European notice, the Portuguese having established themselves in it in connection with their earliest maritime discoveries. The success of Diaz in doubling the Cape subsequently diverted the energies of his country to another sphere, upon which the work of African exploration was taken up by the English. But all the good which was done to Africa had reference only to the advance of geographical knowledge. No attempts were made either by the Portuguese or by the English to civilise the inhabitants. Of course converts to Christianity were made, which testifies only to the irrepressibleness of the missionary character. Many of the races which have been converted eat their dead mothers up to this day.

In connection with recent events, the Gold Coast, Ashantee, and Zanzibar have come into prominence; but there is nothing especial about them as distinguished from other places. There is no doubt that Africa has a future; but, with England struggling at one extremity and France at the other, it will be very slow work to develop her fully if the other European powers do not take part in the work

Digitized by Google

Why does not Germany, that has so much redundant energy to spare, seek an outlet for it near the equator, and annex the Negroland? If Mr Donald Mackenzie's plan of converting the desert of Sahara into an inland sea, by letting in the waters of the Atlantic, can ever be carried out, the interior of Africa will not remain so unhealthy as it is at present.

Mexico.

The states in America requiring to be noticed are the more important of the republics which sprang into existence on the dissolution of the Spanish monarchy, and the empire of Brazil, which belonged to the Portuguese. The Spanish dominions in America at one time surpassed in extent the territorial possessions of Great Britian and Russia. They consisted of Mexico, Guatemala, Porto Rico, and Cuba, in North America; and New Granada, Peru, Buenos Ayres, Caraccas, and Chili, in South America. Of these, Mexico conquered by Cortez, Peru by Pizarro, and Chili by Almagro, were the most important. The first invader on the field was Cortez, who landed in America in 1519, with 508 soldiers and 109 seamen and artificers. The natives, instead of opposing their entrance into the country, facilitated it in every way, till they got alarmed by the discharge of their firearms, after which all attempts to get an interview with Montezuma, their king, were discouraged.

The first settlement established by Cortez was at Vera Cruz. He increased his power by an alliance with the chief of a disaffected Mexican town, and prevented the defection of his own followers by the voluntary destruction of his little fleet, by which all hopes of retreat were cut off. A forced interview

Digitized by Google

with the king, and his violent seizure and retention as a prisoner, made Cortez the ruler of the empire in Montezuma's name, till an attempt to overthrow the religion of the Mexicans roused them to revolt. The struggles that followed do not require to be noticed in detail. The Spaniards were strengthened by the addition of a hostile armament sent against Cortez from Cuba, which was first defeated and then bought over; and Montezuma dying a prisoner, and his second successor, Guatimozin being put to death, all Mexico submitted to the victor, and was annexed to Castile. The achievements of Cortez were, however, not successful in securing the confidence and favour of his sovereign. A new viceroy was appointed to supplant him in Mexico; and, on his return to Spain, the only consolation left to him was the immense fortune he had amassed, which he was permitted to enjoy.

The vastness of the enterprise undertaken by Cortez, and the boldness by which it was carried out, palliated to some extent the lawlessness of his proceedings, and the atrocities by which they were accompanied. After him the colonial history of Mexico has nothing particular to interest the general reader. From 1535 to 1808 Mexico continued to be governed by viceroys sent out from Spain, and the whole country was early converted to Catholicism. The government was very dissimilar in character to that adopted in the English colonies when they sprang up. The Spanish possessions were not colonies, but distinct kingdoms held in fief by the Crown under a grant from the Pope. The people who went to settle in them took out few or no women from Europe, but formed connections with the wives and daughters of those they conquered. A large Creole

Digitized by Google

population was thus gradually formed, which soon rose into importance. In 1810, the invasion of Spain by Napoleon I. caused a revolution in Mexico, the natives of which fought stoutly for liberation. The insurrection was headed by Spaniards, while the Creoles were equally divided on both sides. The royalists proved successful on the occasion, and treated the patriots who were defeated with great severity. People who are constantly speaking of the Black Hole of Calcutta and the atrocities of Sooraja Dowlah, should read the accounts of the dungeons of San Juan de Ullua, where the sentinels on duty frequently fainted from the horrid effluvia issuing from them.

A second revolutionary movement broke out in 1821, and was concluded successfully in 1824. A republican form of government was now established quite independent of Spain, and every inhabitant of Mexico—Spaniard, Creole, or American—was declared to have equal rights. This declaration of independence excited much admiration at the time; but the result has not justified the expectations that were formed of it. The Mexicans have not proved themselves worthy of their independence. Their irregularities gave rise to several disagreements with European states. In the time of Napoleon III. an endeavour was made to force on them a sovereign selected by France; but the United States objected to the interference, and the French being worsted, their nominee was captured and murdered. A great portion of Mexico has already been absorbed by the United States, and sooner or later the whole may come to the same end. All the well-wishers of Mexico wish that this fate for her may soon be realised.

Digitized by Google

Peru.

Peru, the country of the Incas, was first visited by the Spaniards in 1526, when Huanca Capac, the twelfth Inca, was on the throne. The government of the Incas was a theocracy, the sovereign uniting in his own person the supreme temporal and spiritual power. The people were pacific and their superstition mild, in which respect they materially differed from the Mexicans, whose superstition was ferocious. The Peruvians were moreover industrious, and particularly addicted to agriculture, which they carried on with greater skill than any other nation in America. They were also superior to other nations in various arts, such as founding metals, &c.

The fame of the gold of Peru brought down the Spaniards to it from beyond the isthmus of Panama, the first who successfully reached it being Pizarro, a soldier of fortune, who was struck with the barbaric opulence and civilisation of the empire. He returned to Spain to obtain the royal authority to conquer it, and brought out with him three vessels carrying 180 soldiers. He arrived at an opportune moment, when the country was involved in a civil war, and assuming the guise of an ambassador, was joyfully received by the Inca, Atahualpa, who solicited his assistance in putting down the revolt. The seizure of the king and the massacre of his troops was the established policy of Spanish faithlessness in those days, and secured the possession of the kingdom to the king of Spain.

In 1535 a general insurrection of the Peruvians took place under Manco Capac, the Peruvian heir to the throne; but this was put down. The Spaniards subsequently divided into parties and fought against

Digitized by Google

each other till all the desperate spirits were killed, which was followed by the firm establishment in the country of the royal power of Spain. The colonial system of administration adopted by that power was everywhere atrociously oppressive. It was particularly felt as such in Peru, on account of the compulsory labour imposed on the people for working the mines. Every Indian from the age of eighteen to fifty was forced to labour in the mines, and for this purpose had to quit his family, relinquish his trade or occupation, and proceed to a distance of many hundred miles; and of these many thousands perished, both from removal to a different climate and from a sudden change of habits. The rapacity of the governors was also great, and was only equalled by the rapacity of the priests.

Goaded to insurrection by so much tyranny, an attempt to free themselves from it was made by the Peruvians in 1780; but this proved unsuccessful, mainly because, instead of making common cause with the Spanish Americans, the Peruvians fought indiscriminately against them and the government. The Spanish Americans were more successful when they rose against the government on the invasion of Spain by Napoleon I. Peru was the last of the Spanish possessions in America to take part in the insurrection, but was not the least successful. Peru Proper and Upper Peru now constitute two distinct republics.

Smaller Spanish Republics.

The smaller Spanish republics do not require to be separately named. The characteristic features of all of them are the same; the possession of liberty and free institutions by them is merely nominal, the

Digitized by Google

chief controlling power being a military despotism. The only exception to this general rule is perhaps Chili, which is better governed than the rest; but even there the mass of the people do not understand what true liberty is.

Brazil.

The only Portuguese possession of importance in South America was Brazil, which was first discovered by Pinzon, a Spaniard, but afterwards taken possession of by Cabral, the Portuguese navigator, in 1500. At first the intercourse with the natives was very friendly, but this good understanding did not continue long. The attachment of the natives was misused, upon which they repaid ill-treatment so atrociously as led, in a short time, to an end of voluntary emigration from Portugal. It was now that Brazil began to be utilised by the Portuguese government as a penal settlement, and the convicts that were sent out soon committed barbarities which were scarcely surpassed by those of the Spaniards in Mexico and Peru. Beyond sending over the convicts, however, the Portuguese government did nothing for many years, during which period some French merchants effected certain settlements on the coast, while the Spaniards established colonies on the banks of the Paraguay. These advances of other nations at last alarmed the court of Portugal, and led to Brazil being divided by it into a number of hereditary captaincies, which were bestowed on distinguished grandees, who began to people the country at their own expense, exercising regal rights—each within his own holding. Shortly after, on account of the misuse of power by the grandees, it was found necessary to appoint

Digitized by Google

a governor-general over them, the first officer of this rank being sent out in 1549.

The first colony established was St Salvador, in Bahia. The greatest service was done to the infant settlement by the Jesuits, who mixed freely with the natives, conciliated their confidence and attachment, and extended the confines of the settlement. In 1578, Brazil, in common with Portugal, came under the dominion of Spain, on Sebastian of Portugal being cut off by the Moors, and remained in this state of subjection for about sixty years. Spain being at this time at enmity with the whole world, Brazil suffered considerably from the hostility of the English, the French, and the Dutch, the last of whom succeeded in effecting in it a settlement of their own.

In 1640, Portugal shook off the Spanish yoke, and upon the Dutch being engaged in a sanguinary conflict with England for the sovereignty of the seas, Portugal recovered her lost ground in Brazil, for which she afterwards paid the Dutch in hard cash, upon the whole of Brazil being ceded to her by treaty. After this there were wars again with France and Spain; but these were relieved by the brilliant discoveries made in Brazil first of extensive gold-fields, and afterwards of the diamond-mines, for which the country has ever since become famous. In 1710 the French made a last effort to take Rio de Janeiro, but were defeated by the Portuguese, after which peace was concluded between the two nations.

In 1807 the French invaded Portugal with the design of seizing the royal family, upon which the whole court, with everything that could be transported, left Portugal for Brazil. The need of Brazil to Portugal was now demonstrated; it was also

Digitized by Google

established that Brazil had no longer any need of Portugal. The French invasion of Portugal thus virtually gave birth to a new empire in a new hemisphere. Brazil now became a kingdom, and began to develop herself; and when the court returned to the mother country in 1821, Brazil insisted on her liberty, offering her throne to the prince royal of Portugal, which, after some vain efforts to reunite the two countries, was accepted. At this moment, next to the United States and Canada, Brazil is the best governed country in America. Her internal resources are inexhaustible; but the new government has not had sufficient time yet to develop and utilise them fully.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

RÉSUMÉ.

In the preceding pages we have gone into greater details than we intended, but we do not regret having done so, since those details best explain themselves. We have noted all the turning-points of modern history, and explained how the destinies of the several races were shaped; and both the resemblances among them and the diversities between them have been fully elucidated. The periods which most require general attention are those relating to—

1. The emigration of nations from Asia into Europe, and the gradual distribution of the Germanic tribes over all the countries of the West.

2. The restoration of the Western Empire by Charlemagne, and the development of the Saracens in Spain.

3. The consolidation of all kingdoms by the establishment of Feudalism.

4. The Crusades, and the institution of chivalry.

5. The Tartar conquest of Russia, and the Turkish conquest of the Eastern Empire.

6. The struggles for popular freedom, and the foundation of municipal towns and cities.

7. The Reformation of Religion, and the reorganisation of empires and governments.

Digitized by Google

8. The discoveries of Columbus and Gama, and the colonising and commercial enterprises they gave birth to.

9. The struggles for freedom, commencing with the war of American independence.

10. The French Revolution, and the convulsions caused by Napoleon I.

11. The unifications of Italy and Germany.

12. The new order of things that has succeeded the most recent convulsions.

The theatre of the Ancient World was Asia, and only towards the end of the epoch did the empires of Greece and Rome arise. The theatre of the Modern World has been Europe wholly, the other continents and places in them being noticeable merely for such connection as they may have established with Europe. The new era begins with the emigration of nations from Asia, when the figures of Greece and Rome disappear, making way for nations hitherto unknown and undreamt of, that roll over each other like ocean billows, sweeping away the Roman power before them, but only when that power had become too corrupt to endure. The old world, found wanting after prolonged trial, is forced to fall back, and give place to newer races permitted to prove their worth. The first of these were the Goths, who are supposed to have been of non-Asiatic origin, though settled for a time in the north of Asia. They returned to Europe in the fourth century, bringing after them many nations, of whom the Huns were the most prominent. The empire of Rome was now overturned, which enabled the bishop of Rome to assume a great amount of temporal power and dignity, both of which were conceded to him from an idea that there must be a supreme authority some-

Digitized by Google

where, and from the absence of any other aspirant for such authority. The other kingdoms of Europe were simultaneously occupied and repeopled, after which the wave of inundation subsided. A faint effort to revive the empire of Rome was made in the reign of Justinian by Belisarius and Narses, but the internal decay of the empire was too great for any such effort to succeed. The barbarians established themselves forcibly in every place, first in all the Western countries, and afterwards also in the East; and the French, becoming the central power, established themselves as such, being also the first to accept Christianity. The Anglo-Saxons in Britain received Christianity after them, but became sooner distinguished both for their intellectual and religious culture, and they sent over Christian teachers to Germany and Switzerland, by whom both general knowledge and religion were propagated. This gave to all the countries of western Europe a nearly uniform constitution, and opened one channel of communication between peoples that had already become dissimilar.

The first great king was Charlemagne, by whom the Western Empire was re-established. Previous to this the Arabs had established themselves in Spain, and had made violent efforts to conquer France, from which, however, they were heroically repelled. The empire of Charlemagne was great, but that of the Arabs was in all respects greater. The first days of Mahomedanism were barbarous, and it is recorded of Omar that he burnt the Alexandrian library; but in the days of Almansoor and Haroun-al-Raschid, the latter of whom was contemporaneous with Charlemagne, the Arabs were the best educated and most refined people in the world. They had a fair share

Digitized by Google

of civilisation, all the institutions of social life, all the arts of industry: but the barbarians of Europe had none. The Franks in particular were not only barbarous, but grossly immoral; the other Gothic nations were perhaps not equally bad, and the Scandinavian branch of the race was probably decidedly better, but these had not yet developed themselves. The best model that Charlemagne had to follow to civilise his people was that presented by the Arabs, which was far nobler than the model held up by the Greeks; and thus France and Europe came to borrow all their civilisation from Asia. Algebra and the numerals, chemistry, medicine, and geography, were all learnt from the Arabs, and with them all the conveniences, and many of the refinements, of civilised life.

At the same time that Charlemagne contended with barbarism on the continent, Alfred was doing the same good service to England. Both these sovereigns founded schools and promoted the study of the sciences, and the latter also gave his subjects an independent constitution. But the age they lived in was that of iron, and their fostering care died with them. The empire of Charlemagne was very soon broken up, and with it was lost much of the civilisation he had planted. In England, the Normans, for the time at least, uprooted all that Alfred had taken so much pains to cultivate. The world's history was thus thrown back for three hundred years.

The first era of modern history was that of the peoples. All the conquests effected by the barbarians were popular undertakings, the chiefs who directed them having scarcely higher privileges than their followers. The later movements of the Normans

Digitized by Google

and the Danes partook of the same character, and so also did the establishment of the Magyars on the east of Germany. Nay, even the disruption of Charlemagne's empire was effected at the choice of the people, who demanded and selected a separate king for Germany. But after this period we lose sight of the multitude altogether, and read only of the kings and nobles,—a change entirely brought on by the introduction of feudalism, which, as an organised plan of defence, arose spontaneously among the several races on their being settled in their new territories. The warriors who had best assisted their leaders in establishing their power, obtained, by grant or by the force of their own arms, the possession of large tracts of land, on condition of continuing the service which they had rendered so well, the concession being made from the consciousness of a necessity for defending the possessions which had been acquired against the inroads of fresh aggressors. In the disorders that followed, these chiefs, so selected, asserted a lawless authority, which their kings, or superior leaders, were not able to control, and the weak, being anxious for protection, secured it by placing themselves in the same relation to the lords nearest to them as that in which they had originally stood to the paramount sovereign, holding their lands from them on terms of feudal service. The whole system was entirely defensive: it created a strong militia of landholders, great and small, to supply the place of a standing army. But it was disruptive of the former organisation of the community in this way, that, on one side, it cut down the authority of the sovereign power to a nominal supremacy, and, on the other, reduced the authority of the people, by making them thoroughly depend-

Digitized by Google

ent. In Germany especially, throughout the feudal times, the power of the sovereign was confined to the privilege of calling the nobles together for purposes of peace or war; and in France the state of things was no better—the kingdom being reduced, as Hallam describes it, to a mere bundle of fiefs, and the king to little more than one of the feudal nobles, differing rather in dignity than in power from the rest. The system, nevertheless, had its use; for without it the kingdoms established would never have been sufficiently defended. There were no garrison towns in those days, nor regular armies, and some arrangement of the kind was absolutely necessary to secure protection against dangers both from without and within. It particularly made amends for the absence of police, the battlements of the baron providing safety not only to himself, but to all those who crowded round him for defence. In France and Germany it led eventually to the formation of principalities and seigniories, the chiefs of which became virtually independent, as they always retained under themselves a number of counts and margraves, or military functionaries with feudal rights, who followed their banners, even against the common suzerain, when occasion arose; but in Britain, and the northern kingdoms generally, the system was better regulated, even though there also the strong-armed Jarls often acted independently of their kings.

All this time the states of Europe were more or less isolated from each other, never coming in contact except to exchange blows. This isolation was first broken up by the Crusades, which were begun in the eleventh century and concluded in the thirteenth. Like all great movements, they did much

Digitized by Google

to dissolve old bonds and further the cause of improvement. The commercial spirit of all the nations was now, for the first time, called forth; communication with other races diffused education and civilised manners; and the power of the nobility being reduced by the expenses which were entailed on them, the cause of popular liberty began to look up; while Chivalry, which was contemporaneous with the movement, contributed its quota of assistance in clearing the atmosphere. Some think that Chivalry was begotten of the knights; but they were so barbarous and fierce at the age when it arose, that the more correct supposition apparently is that it was foisted into their code by the clergy, who only were in advance of the times. The nobility of the age comprised the strength of the nation, and the clergy its intelligence; and as the latter were called forth into existence mainly for the purpose of counteracting the influence of the former, they took great pains to mitigate the condition of the people and develop their energies, by which means they knew they would best be able to hold the nobility in check. As first instituted, Chivalry was only a defence against club-law, which was then all-prevalent. The rights of the poor were arbitrarily overridden, and innocence and weakness had no safety, the magnitude of distress no compassion. But the clergy saw that the barons, so strong-armed, were excessively weak-brained, and this enabled them to lay down rules, the acceptance of which could not but change the spirit of the times. The bait took; and the effects of the institution were soon found to be very salutary, and have now outlasted its existence. Many of the refinements of modern society,—much of the *finesse* in honour, friendship, and love—

Digitized by Google

much of the endearing traits of humanity and generosity,—are the remnants of a system which was introduced at the right moment, and loyally aided in ameliorating the popular condition.

The last country in the order of civilisation was Russia, though under the house of Rurik she did not appear to disadvantage as compared with other places. Her subsequent conversion into a Mogul province, which position she retained for two centuries and a half, undid the little good that was done to her by the Varangians; nor was much done for her afterwards till the time of Peter the Great, in comparatively modern times. The Turkish conquests in the south were nearly contemporaneous with the Tartar conquest of Russia. The ascendancy of the Crescent had given occasion to the Crusades and the disorders which were thereby committed in Lesser Asia. These were retaliated upon Europe by the Turks, who destroyed the Eastern Empire after it had survived the Western Empire by a thousand years, bombarding Constantinople with guns, the use of which was then little known in Europe. The whole of the eastern side of Europe was thus in trouble for a later period than the other portions of it; but the conquests of the Turks in particular were not without their advantages. The destruction of the Greek Empire greatly weakened the power of the popes; and the convents with their rich libraries being opened to the world, contributed largely to the revival of letters, which, in their turn, called forth aspirations for enlightenment and liberty.

The struggles were hard which emancipated the people. The reign of slavery lasted in Germany till the beginning of the thirteenth century, in France

Digitized by Google

till the middle of the fourteenth century, and in England and Italy till the beginning of the fifteenth century. But in Germany, the duration, though shortest, was more gloomy than in any other country; and it was there that the secret tribunals originally formed for the purpose of distributing justice and protecting innocence, contributed so greatly to strengthen the reign of barbarism. The wish for human rights had, however, been already created, and could not now be kept down, for the courage to assert it had also made its appearance. Alongside of the feudal castles, villages had arisen to minister to the wants of the barons who extended their protection to them. These villages in time had become towns and cities; the extension of commerce had gradually made them rich and powerful; and when the nobles, fearing them, tried to stamp them out, they rose against them, and destroyed the reign of caste. These independent towns were most numerous in Italy, Germany, and France; there were some also in England. They introduced laws, liberty, and a republican form of government amongst themselves, and soon made considerable progress in literature, the sciences, and the arts. But their ascendancy was not the less based on a series of tumults, disorders, and high-handed acts of oppression, without which it could perhaps never have been effectually secured.

A large number of petty republics could best fight the large number of feudal barons scattered all over every country; and the system of republican towns was accordingly continued so long as it was needed. But this period was not very long. The wealth of the barons had already been reduced, and with it their power also; the discovery of gunpowder had narrowed the difference between them and the other

Digitized by Google

orders; and an ecclesiastical class had arisen which, originally as tyrannical to the people as the barons themselves, had veered round to assist the former in achieving their freedom. The continuance of municipal administration ceased therefore in time to be necessary; and, left to themselves, the towns and cities began to fall out with each other, and were easily broken up. But the people had already tasted liberty—the thin end of the wedge had been securely inserted—and the problem began gradually to be worked out in all countries by which the power of the barons was overturned. The power of the sovereigns was in the same ratio increased; and the wars between France and England having broken out, led, among many mischievous results, to the one good result of combining all parties in both countries, which paved the way to the establishment of great monarchies.

The great monarchies appear at the same time with the Reformation, which was as much a political as a religious movement. Throughout the middle ages all power and learning were monopolised by the clergy, both from choice and from circumstances, for the other classes of Europe were then in no condition to appreciate either. This facilitated the dominion of priestcraft; the popes early took advantage of the times; a hierarchy was established in every country; and the pontifical power was gradually extended, till it attained its zenith in the thirteenth century, when the empire of old Rome was fully revived, though in a different way, in the papacy. Of the great increase in the power of the barons we have already spoken, and, where the barons were not absolute, the power of the kings was offensively arbitrary. A great convulsion, a general purging

Digitized by Google

was therefore needed by all Christendom, and this was effected by the Reformation, which reformed, not religion only, but polity also. It elevated the national mind everywhere. The darkness which succeeded the first age of Charlemagne and Alfred was only partially removed in the time of Frederick II. of Germany, and Alphonso X. of Castile. The full blaze of light was not restored till the days of Wicliffe, Huss, and Luther, when everything had to be done *de novo* for improving the popular mind, since books, schools, and knowledge had all intermediately disappeared. The power of the Church over the State was now broken down; and what was materially of great advantage to the people was that the Church lands were restored to the laity.

The consolidation of monarchies was effected during the times of Charles V., Francis I., and Henry VIII. The dissensions between Protestantism and Catholicism broke out at the same time, and continuing for a long period, disturbed the states greatly. This was fomented by the popes through the Jesuits, who had recently started into existence, and also by means of the Inquisition, which filled the world with terror. But the age which witnessed these disturbances also witnessed events of a salutary character; for this was the era of geographical discoveries, of the explorations of Columbus and Gama, which turned over a new page of history. The discovery of America opened out an immense field for independent growth, and made the people in all countries more self-reliant. A new world was pointed out to every one who felt his energies cramped at home; and millions and millions of oppressed subjects, or those who thought themselves to be oppressed, found exercise for their expanded hopes and aspirations in

Digitized by Google

the young country beyond the wide ocean. Commerce, really so called, was now originated; and Spain and Portugal, as pioneers in the way of discoveries, also became, each successively, the first great commercial nation of Europe. But this position they were not able to retain long, mainly on account of their brigandism and tyranny; and the defection of the Netherlands led to the course of traffic being diverted. The Dutch, emulating the Spaniards and the Portuguese, soon supplanted them; and their neighbours, the English and the French, following the example, the masters of Mexico and Brazil were beaten in the race.

With the discovery of new worlds came also the discovery of the Copernican system, on which all modern science is based, and the discovery of printing, which has contributed so much to set the world free. The class of citizens and burgesses began now to develop themselves fully in every state; and a very healthful rivalry was kept up for some time, from which Europe was recalled in the seventeenth century by the aspiring ambition of Louis XIV., who disturbed everything and paved the way for the convulsions that came after him. France already ruled Europe by her language and refinement; she had also taken a high stand in the culture of the mind. But what her vain and excitable people yet wanted was glory and grandeur by arms. This will-o'-wisp she pursued through many a marsh and many a fen, but only to founder deeper in the mire; and eventually the loss to her prestige was as great as the substantial loss she sustained in comfort and possessions. Britain came out of the struggle with flying colours, but only to get foundered in her turn. The expenses of the struggle made her un-

Digitized by Google

just to her colonies, which resisted her attempt to impose arbitrary taxes. This was the first great fight for independence. The cause of the United States was so good that volunteer warriors from all countries swelled the ranks of the Republican army. Not only Frenchmen, Germans, and Poles, but even Englishmen joined them as recruits. England in the war stood by herself, alone; those not in arms against her stood aloof in armed neutrality, looking at her with lowering eyes; her hands were full of other affairs also—namely, of wars in India with the Mahrattas and Hyder Ali. The cause of independence was thus easily gained.

It was now that the eyes of France were opened to her own condition. "America, a distant colony of a rival nation, fought for and won her independence, while we," exclaimed the French, "are in our own country no better than slaves." They viewed with alarm the deficit caused in their finances by the wars of Louis XIV., and summoned the States-General, which had not met for one hundred and seventy-four years; and, when it did meet, while the aristocracy and the Church still fought for their ancient feudal rights, the people loudly demanded immunity from taxation, and the abolition of all prerogatives and privileges. The people were now the great power in the State, and, when decision on their demand was delayed, they took the law into their own hands, raising the well-known cry of "Liberty, equality, and fraternity." Their first demand was for reform, and the first scenes of the drama were confined to the declaration of rights, the abolition of prerogatives and privileges, and the repression of abuses, old and new. It would have been a great blessing to the world if they could have stopped there. Then would

Digitized by Google

not France have been still so backward in the race; then would all Europe have benefited by the example and achieved her freedom. But the glory of the movement terminated at this stage. The wild and inflamed populace did not understand rights; the men who led them hounded them on after blood. The noblest movement of the modern world was thus closed in gloom.

The convulsions inaugurated by Napoleon I. represented only the rebound of the national character from real aspirations to the old pursuit after fire-flies in the mire. Their own country drenched in blood, the French eagerly sought again for war with their neighbours; and what with the wars of the Republic and the wars of the Empire, all Europe was kept in commotion till 1815. It was the old story over again, repeated through all its chapters of glory, greatness, defeat, and shame. On one side it was a war of aggrandisement, on the other a war for the preservation of an equilibrium of power—shadows both, but which in all ages have been hotly contended for. No real equilibrium of power exists; the scale is constantly vacillating. Now it is France, now Russia, now Prussia that becomes—for the time only—the ruling military power of Europe. All others take alarm at once, and there is no rest, no cessation of fear, till a good depletion on all sides brings on a forced harmony. The millennium is yet far in the rear—even the millennium of an equilibrium which will leave present arrangements intact has not yet been found. People fancied that it followed the days of Waterloo, till they were awakened from their dreams by the booming of guns in Italy and Germany.

The unifications of Italy and Germany are recent

Digitized by Google

events, fresh in the recollection of our readers. If Napoleon III. did any good act throughout the whole course of his imperial career, that act was the assistance he rendered to Italy in carrying out the scheme of Cavour. France might well have rested content with the glory of the achievement. Every page of history records her frantic struggles for fame and success, which she was seldom able to secure. She won both on the fields of Magenta and Solferino; but, with a meanness for which the emperor alone was personally responsible, the assistance of France was *sold*. The work of Victor Emmanuel is, however, not yet complete. If fresh convulsions in Germany, which are daily becoming more imminent, give Austria the opportunity to do so, she may yet fight, and fight harder than before, for the recovery of her lost possessions in Italy, unless the complete consolidation of that country intermediately should shut out all hopes of success. The present aspect of Europe gives no assurance on the subject on either side.

As for the unification of Germany, Kaiser William has carried it out with a high hand, and apparently the Prussians are strong enough to maintain it as vigorously as it has been secured. But Germany cannot remain in her present condition long; the hothouse growth she has attained will not last except with the aid of many attendant changes, and it is more than likely that her next convulsion will break out from within; and unless the confederated states are really well attached to each other, their unification may yet disappear as a dream, for all that Bismarck and Moltke have achieved to secure it. The peace which reigns in Europe now is hollow to the core; and Europe knows it, for she is armed

Digitized by Google

to the teeth. Germany has a total army of 1,700,000 men, and is not yet satisfied with her preparations; the army of Russia, taking the forces of Europe and Asia together, amounts to about 1,600,000 men; that of France to about 1,100,000; that of Austria to about 900,000; that of Italy to about 750,000; and even that of England to about 300,000—being larger in every case than can possibly be necessary, except to keep up the play that is expected and feared. Each country professes to be afraid of its neighbour, and is therefore provided with the amplest means of resistance in case of need. This is well enough so far as external violence is concerned; but the greatest dangers in the future for the military states promise to come, not from without, but from within. The backwardness of Germany in refinement and polity, as compared with England and France, was only recently being made up. If she does not soon change her cue and give up playing at soldiers, she will be replunging herself in barbarism and anarchy sooner than she wots of. Every man armed with the bayonet is a loss to the plough, and the plough cannot be neglected long for the bayonet with impunity. The complaints of the working classes in Germany are loud already, and are at the same time felt to be just, for the great industries are being ruined, and commerce has long ceased to thrive. Thousands of people are condemned to idleness and look upon the government with distrust; and the enemies of the empire are agitating on all sides. Of what use will be her 1,700,000 well-trained soldiers when her working classes—those very soldiers in fact—rise up to demand peace, free institutions, and bread?

The five great powers in the age of the Reforma-

Digitized by Google

tion were France, Spain, Portugal, England, and Austria; the five great powers of the present day are England, France, Prussia or Germany, Austria, and Russia; so that Spain and Portugal only have gone out to make room for Prussia and Russia, which have since developed themselves. Of these England alone holds her position on account of her moral greatness, the richness of her dependencies, her commerce, and her constitution, and doubtless also, to some extent, as the first naval power in the world; while all the other great powers owe their position, more or less, to their military organisation; France owing it also to her refinement, and the influence of her manners and language on Europe. The resources of all these powers are very great; but only those of France and England have been fairly developed. The others have been too busy in drilling their soldiers; and the workman withdrawn from his industry, of course, does not work. In England there are three soldiers for every thousand men, in Italy and Belgium twelve, in France and Austria fifteen, Germany twenty-one. The ratio in Russia will not be much less than that in Germany, though it is not very precisely known. This alone gives to England—the smallest part of Europe—the most prominent station in it, for it gives her a first-class position with the minimum number of soldiers. But this is not her only claim to pre-eminence. In common with France she leads the van in civilisation; while, in common with America, she spreads it out farthest in every direction. The commercial spirit of the English and the Americans carry them to every part of the globe; and they carry civilisation with them, albeit it is accompanied by the brandy-bottle. England makes no

Digitized by Google

impression in Europe with her soldiers, for her 300,000 men in Europe, and her 200,000 men in India, are but poor figures against those the great autocrats play with. But beyond their large armies the autocrats have nothing to show, while England exhibits her unbounded wealth, her swarming masses of industrious workmen, her limitless marine. In all these respects America follows in the wake of England closely. The people of both countries are contented and happy, because always at work; the working classes in both are more or less in easy circumstances.

In Europe the example of England has not been much followed. It is not that the other countries do not want to be like her, but that they are unwilling to abandon their own ways. The wish to be like her is made manifest by the general imitation of her constitution; but the form only has been imitated, not the spirit of it, and the consequence is that, while Alfred's wish that the English people should be as free as their thoughts has been fully realised, no other people in Europe has yet approached them in that particular respect. The greatness acquired by the other nations has been acquired by means peculiar to each, and they cannot now accommodate themselves to a different course. We see clearly whither Germany, and France, and Austria are drifting to by adhering to their own old tracks; but there is no help for them, for they cannot mend. Religious and mental liberty have vindicated themselves almost equally in most of the European countries; the arts and the sciences have been improved and inventions multiplied in Germany and Italy as much as in England and France; the refinements of private life have also been augmented in all places, though

Digitized by Google

not to the same extent; and in most of them the condition of the humbler classes has been much though not equally improved: but the position of the English people, who seek for no social regeneration, and among whom the word revolution has long been forgotten, has nowhere been attained.

We have confined our remarks mainly to the state of Europe, because Europe, with the United States and the dependencies of Great Britain, virtually constitute the modern world. The states of Asia are old and effete; those of Africa are as barbarous as can well be conceived; and those of America, exclusive of the United States and Canada, too unsettled for the formation of any decisive opinion in regard to them. Apart from Europe, the amount of ignorance, barbarism, and misery in all places is still very great, notwithstanding the general boast made of the civilisation of the nineteenth century. In most of the other places no civilisation has yet penetrated, while in some of them the civilisation they had has worn out. The progress in material things has latterly been rather remarkable in all places which are not absolutely new. Even China and Japan have accepted physical improvements as represented by ironclads and arms of precision, and are constructing railways, and talk of laying down telegraph cables to join them with their dependencies. But the spheres of social, intellectual, and political improvement have not been equally, or even proportionately, expanded. The progress in literature is usually held to be marvellous, and the influence exercised by it has generally been exercised in the wellbeing of mankind. But the area within which there has been any progress to speak of is, after all, very limited; for the portion of the world that reads

Digitized by Google

and writes is still less than the portion that does not read and write; and the effete states of the East, which do read and write, refuse to accept the mental culture of the West, without which even the closest imitation of her physical improvements will not rescue them from their social and political degradation. The same remark applies also to the sciences and the arts, which, born in Asia, have been preserved in and have spread over Europe, where they have received a new impetus, improving both in standard and taste; but to a large portion of the world they are at this moment not sufficiently known either to aid in the preservation of life, or to secure its comforts and conveniences.

This is a sad picture of the world we live in. It is doubtful if all the barbarous races in it are capable of being civilised; but there is no question that a great many of them are, as our experience in North and South America, in Australasia, and in several of the Pacific islands, has already established. An attempt on a wholesale scale ought now to be made to civilise them all; and this would find better occupation for Germany, Austria, and France than that which engages them at this moment. The first action of the nations that migrated from Asia into Europe was destruction, everything everywhere being by them overturned and levelled with the ground. The first action of the conquerors and colonisers of modern times, including the Spaniards, Portuguese, English, French, and Americans, has similarly been to destroy, not institutions only, but even the aboriginal races they came in contact with. A better policy has since been recognised, though we cannot say that it has yet been generally acted upon. The descendants of the Vikings, who distinguished

Digitized by Google

themselves by conquests, but did not exterminate the races they conquered, now admit the principle that it is better to let the barbarians live, and to buy them over by teaching them the arts of peace, though some still doubt whether it is possible in every instance to do so. The world, it is freely admitted, is wide enough to hold all the nations on it, including both those who are free and fortunate, and those who are yet held in the bonds either of barbarism or slavery. But it is still contended that it has been found by practical experience that the contiguous residence of civilised and barbarous races is often impossible, and necessarily leads to oppression and extermination. If it really be so, it behoves the civilised world all the more to regenerate those who are uncivilised, even with a little violence to commence with; and this can only be fully accomplished, not by missionary exertions, but by secular arms. Charlemagne civilised the Saxons by the sword; let the descendants of Charlemagne now civilise the benighted inhabitants of Asia, Africa, and America in the same way, should there really be no better course to follow. Up to this time what has civilisation achieved worth boasting of? Great were the expectations that wars would die out, and that nations would live side by side in love and peace. That delusion has long been dissipated; Christianity has failed to establish the dominion of love and peace which was preached by it so ardently; wars not only continue, but are day by day being rendered more and more scientific, destructive, and universal. Reading the history of the world carefully, it seems doubtful whether any real advance beyond mere change has ever been made. It certainly does seem that we are only turning with an ever-turning circle,

Digitized by Google

which presents to us different, but not necessarily progressive, phases as it goes round. Assyrian and Persian greatness, and Grecian and Roman greatness, have made way for English and French greatness, which in their turn will probably yield to American and Russian, and Canadian and Australasian greatness; but the character of the greatness in different ages does not appear to have really much varied. Why does war still define greatness; why is the most martial nation yet held to be the first? Actually this is not so; Europe, the smallest part of the world, governs the rest, though even now the most martial races of mankind are to be found in Asia; and England, the smallest part of Europe, is in reality the first power in it; though possibly vastness may have its day in the future, as represented by America and Russia, which are now contending for the post of honour, and by Canada and Australasia, which will claim it in due course. Why, then, should military prowess be still held in general estimation to be the one and only criterion of national pre-eminence? It is this great mistake that is prolonging the era of barbarism. If a life of perpetual tumult be as necessary to states as to individuals, is there no means of securing it apart from feuds and fears? Roll up the stone of Sisyphus by all means as often as it rolls down, if it be the unavoidable condition of our existence to do so. But let us vary the exertion intelligently, by accepting operations still more arduous and far more glorious than fighting with and destroying each other, either for the Rhine frontier, or for the possession of Constantinople.

The regeneration of Asia has been undertaken by Russia. England, satisfied with India, is unable to achieve more, and any attempt on her part to thwart

Digitized by Google

Russia must therefore be simply abortive; for Providence looks not to the greatness of either Russia or England, but to the wellbeing of the world. England for herself has chosen the colonisation of Australasia and Canada, a glorious undertaking, which promises her the greatest honour and success. The boast of France has been that the French language is the language of Europe; the boast of England soon will be that the English language is the language of the world. The United States of America have also chosen a splendid field for themselves in their own part of the globe, to which they are trying to do their duty well, though they have most unnecessarily depopulated it of its aboriginal races. Could not the other great empires of the world—Germany, Austria, and France—and the smaller states of Europe, take a share in the work of regeneration, by selecting special fields of exertion in Africa and America and other places yet unoccupied by any European power? Jean Paul Richter used to say that while the French held the sovereignty of the land, and the English the sovereignty of the sea, the Germans had appropriated to themselves the sovereignty of the air. The Teutons have since deprived the Franks, for the time at least, of their land sovereignty; but have nevertheless not yet come down from their aerial elevation. It is time, however, that they should; and the advantage of their present position gives them special facilities which ought not to be neglected. One-fourth of the large army of Germany, which keeps all Europe in tremor, would conquer and then civilise one-half of the African continent. Observe calmly, and it will be seen that the only nations that are doing best are those that have created work for themselves in this

Digitized by Google

way—namely, Russia, America, and England; that the great nations that are not prospering are those fighting for shadows — a fancied unification where there is no real unity, or a convenient boundary-line which it will always require two parties to agree to. Providence has plenty of useful work for all, if they will only take the trouble to find it out. The fitness of Africa and South America for European colonisation may perhaps be disputed; though it appears to us that, if unfit for colonisation by Englishmen, they are not necessarily unfit for colonisation by the Germans, a cold and sober people well calculated to hold their ground where the English would give way. But, even if it be otherwise, both Africa and America are certainly open to civilisation by conquest in the manner which has been so successfully followed in India and Central Asia; and a worthier object of ambition could not be held up for general competition. "The age of chivalry is gone," exclaimed Burke, "and that of sophists, economists, and calculators has succeeded, which has extinguished the glory of Europe for ever." But we do not think that it is so. It is true that the age of commerce, the best friend of man, has to some extent displaced the age of military bravado, which was, and yet continues to be, the greatest enemy of the world; but real chivalry has not gone out from us altogether, and is not incompatible with economy and calculation: and this it is yet open to Germany to come forward and establish.

Germany has no colonies of her own at present, and yet the number of emigrants from the country every year is very great. Emigration, in fact, is the safety-valve of the modern world; without such depletion the mother country would in a short time be

Digitized by Google

reduced to the greatest distress. How, then, does the case with Germany actually stand? She sends out all her superfluous energy to America; or, in other words, pays tribute to America in men, just as the Spaniards paid tribute to the Moors in maidens. These emigrants catch republican ideas in their new homes, and transmit them in due course to their fatherland. The rulers of Germany well know how that is operating at home, how the materials for a revolution are being slowly and gradually collected. This alone should induce Germany to found a colony of her own.

Of course emigration will conflict with the military spirit of the mother country, but only in the same way as it has done in England. It will not make the nation less warlike in its real need, but it will make it less pugnacious by rendering the maintenance of a large army too expensive for mere show. On the other hand, it will raise the condition of the middle classes throughout the country; and in the modern world, those countries only are and will be the greatest in which the middle classes thrive best. The lower classes even in England are not as well off as could be desired; but for this, also, emigration is the best, perhaps the only remedy, as it opens out to those classes the widest sphere of usefulness at a distance from home. The history of the world, as we read it, teaches us that kings nowhere were ever, as a rule, very brilliant specimens of humanity; and the policy followed in Turkey for several centuries of deposing those who were proved to be imbecile, appears to us to have been a very convenient one, which other nations would have done well to imitate. At any rate, a blind admiration of imperialism at this hour of the day cannot but be regarded as a grievous mistake.

Digitized by Google

Nor do we find anywhere that the nobles and the clergy were ever endowed with any extra degree of self-denial. There is no reason, therefore, why the general mass of any community should sacrifice their interests for the good, real or imaginary, of either kaiser or lord. "Each for himself, and God for us all," is the best motto both for individuals and nations; and the people of Germany, acting in accordance with that motto, should take their concerns in their own hands, as the people of England have done for a long time past, and emulate the policy inaugurated by England and Russia. They should not, however, go out merely as plundering adventurers, as the Spaniards and the Portuguese did. No possessions held on that tenure can last long. The mission must be one of civilisation; actual benefits must be conferred on the barbarian nations that are subdued; and such service in the general interests of mankind will always bring its own reward.

THE END.

Digitized by Google

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS.

Digitized by Google

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

I.

BENGAL:

AN ACCOUNT OF THE COUNTRY FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES.

Crown 8vo, 5s.

EXTRACTS FROM REVIEWS.

Westminster Review.

"Mr Barton's little work on Bengal is a well-written account of an important portion of our Indian Empire. It gives a very full account of the physical peculiarities, the products, and traditions of the district, and deals at some length with the characteristics and religious beliefs of the natives. It is in every way eminently readable, and the chapter upon the effects of British rule is judicial and significant."

Allen's Indian Mail.

"The author has supplied a want which many people in England must often have felt. After reading Mr Barton's pages, they will hardly, we think, be inclined to agree with his opening statement, that 'there is no readable account of Bengal.' If there was none before his book appeared, he has gone far, at any rate, to fill up the void with a volume which tells in 250 pages nearly all that most of us would deem worth knowing about one of the earliest and most important of our Indian possessions. . . . The traditions of the old Hindu days are pleasantly narrated, and the reminiscences of Mahomedan rule form the subject of an interesting chapter, followed in its turn by some pages of instructive talk about old

Digitized by Google

buildings and ruins, Hindu and Mahomedan. The chapter on classification and distribution of the people is full of useful and fairly accurate information, clearly and readably conveyed. Two chapters equally good in their way are devoted to the condition and distinctive traits, the religious beliefs and festivals of the people of Bengal. . . . In the last two chapters of this well-informed and informing book the author discusses with equal fairness and intelligence the various changes made, and the good effected by, our rule, and the general progress of popular education in Bengal. Altogether the inquiring reader will do well to read and digest the contents of a volume compiled by an evident master of his subject."

The Daily Review.

"The writer is well-informed, fair, and accurate."

The Scotsman.

"The book is crammed with information, which is generally accurate. . . . Mr Barton's chapters on the physical characteristics of Bengal, the cultivated and natural products, the classification and distribution of the people, and their condition and distinctive characteristics, are the most valuable portions of the work."

The Glasgow News.

"The author evidently writes from personal observation. . . . Hence the attractive nature of the work, which is at once descriptive and historical, and some chapters of which are so happily written that they read like an interesting romance."

The Edinburgh Courant.

"The style is precise and direct, and the author brushes aside without compunction whole swarms of prevailing notions on Indian affairs. . . . Clearly he has read deeply of Indian history, and has measured by personal experience the present condition of the people and the varied social energies operating

Digitized by Google

at this moment in Bengal. . . . The educationist and the missionary, as well as the statesman and administrator, will find of vital importance much that Mr Barton writes; and in matters relating to religion and education his suggestions seem broad and unimpeachable. The book describes the physical and political geography of the Presidency, its natural products, and those that have been imported. One chapter sketches the traditions of the period when it was under Hindu rule; another shows the changes effected by Mahomedan rule; and one exhibits the existing relics of both periods. These chapters are the most condensed in the volume, and would be very hard reading were it not that the conclusions are higly valuable for present practical purposes. When in the following chapters the author describes the ethnological varieties located over 250,000 square miles of the Presidency, and tells us what are their present customs and religious beliefs, as well as the relations between these and their practical life and the possibilities of the future, the book gets intensely interesting. . . . Because Mr Barton's book is thoroughly practical in its outcome, and grasps the matters most intimately related to the stability and progress of our Indian Empire, we heartily commend it to the attention of our readers."

Times of India.

"It contains a large amount of information, well arranged and very readable."

Friend of India.

"The chapter on the Antiquarian Relics is an exceptionally good one, and will amply repay a careful perusal."

Digitized by Google

II.

THE

ANCIENT WORLD.

Crown 8vo, 6s.

EXTRACTS FROM REVIEWS.

Westminster Review.

"Mr Barton's 'Ancient World,' though not primarily designed as a school-book, may very well be used in that capacity. Indeed, our school-books are a little too demonstratively school-books. The present history, after some good prefatory remarks, gives the broad outlines of the Chinese, Indian, Persian, and Egyptian story, and concludes with a *Résumé* of the general results. The chief ideas which emerge from a wide survey are distinctly brought forward, and we can honestly recommend the book."

British Quarterly Review.

"Compendiums of history are useful, but not always perfectly satisfactory. They are general, and necessarily without those details which are essential to fulness and accuracy. Mr Barton's book, however, is one of the best of the kind. He has contrived to condense into his various chapters a great amount of valuable information. His object is to establish his theory of the Deluge, and the peopling of the various parts of the world. If he has not in all respects demonstrated his view, he has done much to give it plausibility, and to render it worthy of thoughtful examination by those who will accept literally the statements contained in the Book of Genesis. The volume will repay perusal."

Digitized by Google

The Daily Review.

"We know no work which, in the compass of some 340 small pages, gives so clear and well-informed a critical narrative of præ-Christian times as this. It should be studied by all teachers of history, if only to provoke them to research and reading on their own account, and to show the proper place of Asia in early civilisation. Indirectly, the whole book, and especially the *Résumé* with which it closes, is an answer to the one-sided school of anthropologists who make the race start from savagery. . . . The peculiar merit of the book is, that it gives fairly and succinctly the latest results of historical investigation into the history of præ-Christian empires."

Notes and Queries.

"Mr Barton illustrates ancient history in a spirit of the freest inquiry. The historical portion of the Bible he holds to be at least incomplete, and their writers not necessarily infallible. He shows, in a very interesting manner, where the other sources of the early history of nations are to be found; and he explores them fearlessly. For men of the world, whose memories need refreshing, or whose minds want enlightenment, this book will be found useful."

The Scotsman.

"Outside an encyclopædia, it would not be easy to find a book presenting such a mass of information in so accessible and readable a form. There is abundant evidence in it of wide reading and painstaking comparison and deduction."

The Banffshire Journal.

"Mr Barton, in a volume of 300 pages, presents a summary of the ancient history of China, India, Persia, Assyria, Egypt, besides an estimate of the comparatively later histories of Greece and Rome. Mr Barton possesses great powers of condensation, and has the faculty of presenting a narrative in a style at once pleasing and informing. He has the merit of being an independent thinker. . . . Readers who desire to see in a compact shape a presentation of the history of the early empires of the world, will find Mr Barton's book extremely useful."

Digitized by Google

Liverpool Daily Albion.

"Believers in the literal inspiration of the Bible will have their faith rudely shocked by the conclusions advanced regarding the early history of the world; but it is sufficient to say in answer, that the book is not intended for this class of readers. It can have a value to those only who are open to know what the records and unwritten history of the world really have to teach; and who are not afraid to own and follow an honest love of truth. . . . In times like the present, when books of all kinds are so rapidly multiplying, a work of this nature, which, in a popular sense, serves to anchor the mind in the solid substance of human history, cannot but be beneficial. It contains all that is requisite for the stimulation of a healthy study of the subject; and the reader who will pursue the various ramifications it sketches and suggests, will be well stored with knowledge."

The Aberdeen Journal.

"This book contains a series of rapid chapters on the early history of China, India, Persia, Assyria, Phœnicia, Egypt, Greece, and Rome. It is written in a fluent style, and contains a good deal of information tersely put."

The Glasgow News.

"Those who are unable to obtain the larger and more expensive histories of ancient times, will appreciate the labours of Mr Barton, in furnishing them with such an interesting little work as the book before us. . . . The work is one which will materially aid Biblical students in comprehending many Old Testament references as to the ancient world."

The Literary Churchman.

"We do not, as we have said, think his solution of difficulties, by supposing independent centres of creation, tenable, and we have said so. But we gladly acknowledge a discussion of the question which, if not convincing, is always fair. And besides, the industry with which a variety of details have been brought together, from many and recondite sources, fully deserves a grateful acknowledgment."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

DEC 4- 1929

Digitized by Google